Corruptions of Christianity: Catholicism

Introduction

Very few Catholics have ever been willing to open this teaching, let alone read it in its entirety, but no matter how few will seek the truth, I still write this for their sakes. It is the duty of Christians to expose darkness for the sake of those who are lost, that their souls might be saved on the Day of Judgment, and that is the main purpose of this book.

And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.
- Ephesians 5:11

The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that winneth souls is wise.
- Proverbs 11:30

There are many people I’ve met over the years who call themselves "Christians," and believe Catholics are their brethren, because they believe that Catholicism is just a "branch" or "sect" of Christianity. I want to make it clear to readers that if you believe, practice, or teach according to what the Catholic Church believes, practices, and teaches, then you are not of Christ. This is not to say that a born again Christian cannot exist in the Catholic Church, but if they are of Christ, they will NOT remain in it very long because they will not follow after the voice of strangers:

And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.
- John 10:4-5

The Bible instructs born again Christians to come out from among those who walk in darkness, and not to have fellowship (i.e. companionship/communion) or concord (i.e. agreement) with them:

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.
- 2 Corinthians 6:14-18

I am hard pressed to find any entity in history that has been more destructive to this world, and has shed more blood of Christians, than Rome and her Catholic Church; we will see a lot of evidence of this in later chapters of this book. Of course, practicing Catholics will be deeply disturbed by such a statement, but I say this with full confidence in Christ: They are ignorant of the truth, or more specifically, WILLINGLY ignorant, because the information I will present in this teaching is not difficult to find for those who look.

For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
- Luke 11:10

Though the information is relatively easy to find, Catholics remain in their false religious system because they do not have the Spirit of God for discernment and understanding:

But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.
- 1 Corinthians 2:14
For most Catholics, I would call them to repentance, which is grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing; however, for some Catholics, they do tend to show a repentant attitude, and their problem is that they have a worldly repentance. This means they repent towards men (i.e. like how they go to a priest for confession and Mary for prayer), following the doctrines of men, but there is no repentance towards God and His doctrine; they speak honor to "God" and to "Jesus," but their hearts are far from Him.

This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.
- Matthew 15:8-9

For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.
- 2 Corinthians 7:10

Of course, the common mantra from church-goers everywhere is: "You're just one of those anti-Catholics! You should be more loving to the Catholics!" Sadly, very few people love Catholics enough to tell them the truth; they fear the outburst of Catholics more than they fear God. Most people could not care less if a Catholic dies in their sin and ends up in hell and the lake of fire, but I care enough about them to spend the countless hours I've put into this book to share with them the truth of the Word of God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.
- John 8:32

Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.
- John 17:17

And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.
- 2 Thessalonians 2:10

Whether a Catholic is willing to read and understand these things is not my responsibility. To love God is to keep his commandments, and if we are to love our Catholic neighbors, then we ought to tell them the truth that they might be saved from hellfire.

If ye love me, keep my commandments.
- John 14:15

Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.
- Matthew 28:19-20

In this article we will demonstrate that most of what the Catholic Church teaches is in direct opposition to the Word of God. This is not hearsay or conjecture, as Catholics have often claimed in my encounters with them, but rather, this is documented fact, and as you go through this article, you will find that I will quote directly from Vatican sources, and I provide references you can look up for yourself to compare what they teach to the Word of God so you can see the truth for yourself.

Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?
- Galatians 4:16

Many Catholics have scoffed at me and made me into their enemy when I'm trying to win their souls to the Christian God of the Bible. However, this is no surprise, because Jesus Christ told many people the truth and most of them didn't believe Him either.

And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.
- John 8:45
If Catholics won't listen to me when I teach them the truth, that the Catholic Church opposes the Bible at every turn, then perhaps they would be willing to hear a former 23-year veteran Catholic priest who has been born again in Christ. He explains that priests are not learning the doctrines of the Bible, but rather, they learn the doctrines of pagan philosophers:

Ex-Catholic Priest (23 Yrs) Richard Bennett
https://youtu.be/f8eylzmDp04

RICHARD BENNETT: "I also had bought, before I went into the monastery, a Bible. I thought we were going to study the Bible. I spent three pounds sterling buying a Bible, and I thought this is where we were really going to spend our time. I found that the first year was all rituals, devotions... we did all these religious exercises, but we didn't study Scripture. And then, we did start to study intently everyday in the second year, but it was the philosophy of Aristotle, a pagan 300 years before Christ. To this day, priests are still trained in the philosophy of Greece. And then, we studied all the philosophies of the world. Then we started, after that, four years of theology of the famous Thomas Aquinas. We did study the introduction to some of the book so of the Bible, but always under the authority of the [Catholic] Church. So it was not anything to do with the Word; it was to do with Catholicism."

As you can see, Catholic priests are not trained in the Word of God; rather, they follow after pagan philosophers, learning the traditions and doctrines of men and, absorbing the rudiments (i.e. first teachings) of the world.

Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.
-Colossians 2:8

In this book, I will show readers WHY they don't train priests to study the Word of God, and why most Catholics (including many priests and bishops) don't have much understanding of what is in the Bible. If you have never studied this topic before, the answers may surprise you, so prepare yourself. Let's begin by looking at a brief overview of the history of the Catholic Church so we can understand the foundation of the world's largest cult.

# 1 – Catholic history: A Pagan Foundation

The Catholic Church has long claimed that it began with Jesus Christ and the Apostles of Christ, as Britannica Encyclopedia states:
"The Roman Catholic Church traces its history to Jesus Christ and the Apostles."

Notice that they say the Catholic Church "traces" its history; this is because Catholics do not have evidence of that history, but rather, it's simply a claim. If you continue to read Britannica's article, they go on to give more specific details, but before I even read it, I knew what they were going to do: Since Catholicism claims its beginnings to be with the apostles in the first century, what they would likely do is bring up the book of Acts to start off Catholicism's supposed "origins," then skip 300 years, and that's exactly what they did because that's exactly how the Catholic Church tells the story, which is not "tracing" anything; it's just conjecture. (i.e. Conjecture is just a guess because they have no records or knowledge of what they're talking about.)

To save a lot of reading, I'm going to state the general claim of the Catholic Church (we will go over details on all this later), but keep in mind that this is a Catholic CLAIM to their history, which is made under false pretenses; meaning that none of this has evidence to support it, nor does it have anything to do with Christ's church. The general claim of the Catholic Church is that Peter, an apostle of Christ, was the first Pope, or head authority over the Church, and he instituted its structure in the early days after Christ. About 300 years later, the Christians were persecuted because Rome had declared Christianity illegal, and some organization was needed. In addition, the Christians of that day wanted to make some sort of "New Jerusalem" for Christianity in the Roman Empire, so the Roman Emperor Constantine happened to
convert to Christianity about the same time, legalizing Christianity in Rome, and became the new Pope. This all sounds light-hearted and pleasant, but it is a fanciful LIE because numerous details of actual history are removed from Catholic textbooks, and the average Catholic has no idea they are deceived.

Though Catholics claim their origins started with Christ, in reality, the origin of Catholicism started in 312 AD with Constantine I, the Battle of the Milvian Bridge, and a pagan symbol that is known today as the "labarum." The battle was a war between Constantine and Maxentius, who fought over the title of Roman Emporer, but before the battle began, Constantine claimed to have had a vision that led him to believe he was under divine protection, but he needed to put a special symbol on the shields of his soldiers to gain this power.

If you find Catholics that speak of this event, the general claim is that Constantine used a cross symbol, like that which Christ was crucified upon, which supposedly came from his vision. In fact, the wicked, corrupt, Catholic-supporting Christianity Today Magazine reports on this:

"In October 312, Constantine and his forces marched toward Rome. Arrayed against them were the armies of Maxentius—four times greater. At stake was control of Rome and sole rule of the Western Empire. According to Christian historian Eusebius, the troubled Constantine sought help in prayer to his father's god. Constantine then had a vision of a cross of light emblazoned against the sun and saw the words In hoc signo vinces: 'In this sign you will win.'... The emblem [symbol] was thought of as incorporating a cross... Constantine incontrovertibly [without a doubt] adopted it as a token of his Christian allegiance."


Constantine's father, Constantius Chlous, was a pagan, and so too was Constantine. Constantine was calling on pagan gods in this story, not the Christian God of the Bible. Constatine later tried to say that his father was a Christian, but the great persecution by Rome against the Christians started in 303, AFTER Constantius Chlous's military victory over the Carpians and Germania. Are we to believe that he declared himself to be a Christian, and then decided to start hunting and slaughtering his brethren? In short, the story has a lot of holes, and it gets worse as it goes.

Constantine's personal advisor, Lactantius, documented more details about this symbol:

"Constantine was directed in a dream to cause the heavenly sign to be delineated [precisely drawn] on the shields of his soldiers, and so to proceed to battle. He did as he had been commanded, and he marked on their shields the letter X, with a perpendicular line [90° angle to a given line] drawn through it and turned round thus at the top, being the cipher of Christ... Maxentius went to the field. The bridge in his rear was broken down. At sight of that the battle grew hotter.

The hand of the Lord prevailed, and the forces of Maxentius were routed. He fled towards the broken bridge; but the multitude pressing on him, he was driven headlong into the Tiber."


The "Tiber" refers to the Tiber river, where Constantine's enemy drowned, Maxentius's body later recovered, and Constantine had his decapitated head paraded around the city. Constantine's vision was later claimed to be from the Christian God of the Bible, and that this symbol was from God, but the Bible tells us that is a lie:

Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

-Acts 17:29-30
This includes even the very cross symbol that is plastered around almost every church building, along with necklaces, statues, tattoos, etc. Also, the so-called "Jesus fish" is pagan in its origin, and does not represent God, Christ, or Christianity in any way. To "wink" means that God is closing His eyes to the people who use these symbols, and I would exhort born again Christians to repent and get rid of their idols.

(Read "Christian Symbols Are Not Christian" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The explanation given by the Catholic Church for why Constantine chose the "labarum" symbol is not even close to why it was originally crafted. It was not only designed after the Egyptian ankh (crux ansata, which means "cross with a handle"), which is commonly used in paganism to represent gods and goddesses of the afterlife (i.e. that's why it's so commonly associated and found with mummies), but the labarum is also designed after a symbol of a Persian god: "LABARUM: Emblem of the Persian god Mithra, derived from the Egyptian ankh, painted on the shield of the emperor Constantine for the purpose of encouraging his Mithra-worshipping soldiers to believe they were fighting for their god. Because the labarum resembled the Greek letters khi and rho superimposed on each other, and khi and rho were the first two letters of khristos, it was later claimed by the Christians that Constantine had triumphed under a Christian symbol. In fact Constantine did not declare himself a Christian until much later."


Soldiers at this time already commonly worshipped Mithra, so before we continue, I would like to propose my theory of what actually happened, based on the fact that Constantine was outnumbered 4 to 1 in this battle, and those odds are almost guaranteed to lose a war. When soldiers know they're going to lose, and this is a battle over the emperor, which means whoever loses gets executed by the new emperor, it would be expected for soldiers to depart from their duty and abandon Constantine. So to prevent his soldiers from departing from low morale, he makes up a "vision," that happens to be linked to the symbol of the god they worshiped, so they would believe they had divine protection, it would boost morale and support, and then burned the bridge behind him, so none of his soldiers could run away. Then, if he won, the people would see Constantine as divine, believing he is a god himself. (That's interesting when you consider that the Pope is still called a "god" to this day, and we'll see evidence of that in Chapter 7.)

It wasn't until about a decade after this battle that Constantine declared himself to be a "Christian," and leads us to question if the events of this battle were supposed to be the crux (pun-intended) for his conversion, why did it take him so long to declare it? After all, as we just read, Constantine didn't "convert" to Christianity until many years after this battle, so why is this battle connected to his alleged conversion? That's food for thought. Nevertheless, what Constantine did is called idolatry, which is a practice of heathens/pagans, and has nothing to do with the Lord Jesus Christ and His church.

(Read "The Biblical Understanding of Idolatry" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Ye shall make you no idols nor graven image, neither rear you up a standing image, neither shall ye set up any image of stone in your land, to bow down unto it: for I am the LORD your God.
- Leviticus 26:1

Mithra, or Mithras, was a Roman god that was popular in the Roman military in the days of Constantine. Looking at the images below, you can see how Constantine altered the ankh with Greek letters, then attached it to a Mithras-like symbol, and he put it on the coins he had printed.
In case anyone didn't recognize it, the Mithras symbol is also where we get "medical" symbol commonly found in the U.S. today. Even the commonly sworn "Hippocratic Oath" was originally sworn to pagan gods and goddesses, but those pagans gods were removed from the oath to "Americanize" it. This helps demonstrate the true origins behind modern-day "medicine," and it's one of the many reasons why modern "medical science" doctors, along side the pharmaceutical industry, are killing more people than they're helping. (Read "The Cure for Cancer" & "The United Vaccin-Nations" here at creationliberty.com for more details; the word pharmakeia, where we get the root word for pharmaceutical, literally means "sorcery.")

Because the symbol Constantine used formed Greek letters that spelled out the Greek word for "annointed," or "christ," (i.e. khi + rho = khristos) therefore, the heathen who followed Constantine claimed in ignorance that it was the Christian God of the Bible who gave him the vision for the pagan symbol. It is claimed that this led to Constantine's conversion to "Christianity," but there is no solid evidence of this; rather, it seems he was guided down that path by some influential people around him, and later on in his life, he eventually claimed to be Christian.

There is also a misconception that Constantine legalized Christianity, but that's not the case because he was only a co-regent (joint ruler) at the time. The plan was brought to the current Emperor Galerius in 311 AD by Licinius and Constantine, and it was Galerius that allowed the practice of Christianity, better known as the Edict of Toleration. The edict only stated that Christians would be tolerated, or allowed to practice, but they were not endorsed by Rome like all the other pagan religions, and without endorsement, Roman governors would not have been allowed to be Christians. This makes much more sense because it would have been a crime for Constantine to claim Christian revelation while he battled for the title of Emperor of Rome in 312 AD, which would mean he would have been acting against Roman law, and it would not have looked good on his claim to the throne. (i.e. If he really were of Christ, that would not have stopped him, but this was all a political game.)


It is for these reasons that the true beginning of the Catholic Church started with Constantine's demonic vision in 312 AD (i.e. it was not from God); however, because Catholicism is typically viewed in terms of organization rather than foundation, it is more commonly understood that its origin was in 325 AD with the First Council of Nicaea. The Council of Nicaea is commonly claimed by Catholics to be the first ecumenical "Christian" organization in the history of the world.

ecumenical (adj): universal, united

The problem with this claim is that Catholicism has nothing to do with the Christian God of the Bible, as we've already seen; Catholicism's origins and its first leader were pagan from the start. Keep in mind that Constantine was a Roman, and one of the things Rome was most well-known for was their ecumenical nature; meaning that they sought out religions and cultures from all over the world and brought them under one umbrella, conquering as they went, which is where the phrase "all roads lead to Rome" came from.

For example, the following authors document the Rus, a culture of eastern Russia and Ukraine, who were a conversion project for the Catholics in the 12th century. Notice that their pagan beliefs did not change, but they simply added "Christian" doctrine to their pagansim:
"The pagan Rus in all probability shared the Nordic gods and beliefs common to the people of Scandinavia. Pagan Slavs worshipped Perun, the god of lightning and thunder. The Rus probably identified him with Thor, the Viking god of rain and thunder. The Rus also believed in good and evil spirits among the wood and river spirits... The conversion to Christianity [i.e. Catholicism], which happened earlier in the south closer to Constantinople and in urban areas, did not mean cessation of all pagan practices. Many Rus maintained a double faith, attending church yet continuing to participate in pagan festivals, such as summer solstice celebrations. With time the two faiths merged into one, as pagan mythological became identified with Christian historical figures. Perun was identified with the prophet Elijah, depicted as riding a fiery chariot."


This is just one example to help demonstrate the point; I will show more instances of this later, but the fact is that Catholic Church has, from its very beginning, followed the tradition of Rome to adopt all pagan religions into one ecumenical (i.e. unified) organization. The practice of calling the same god or goddess by a variety of names from different cultures is a tradition witches are accustomed to:

"When envisioning the Goddess and God, many of the Wicca see them as well-known deities from ancient religions. Diana, Pan, Isis, Hermes, Hina, Tammuz, Hecate, Ishtar, Cerridwen, Thoth, Tara, Aradia, Artemis, Pele, Apollo, Kanaloa, Bridget, Helios, Bran, Lugh, Hera, Cybele, Inanna, Maui, Ea, Athena, Lono, Marduk—the list is virtually endless. Many of these deities, with their corresponding histories, rites and mythic information furnish the concept of deity for Wiccans."


Thus, it was not that paganism wormed its way into Catholicism, but rather, it was Catholicism that was inherently pagan from the very beginning, and we'll see more evidence of this in later chapters. Their goddess "Mary" is one of the many names for pagan goddesses, and to their false god they gave the name "Jesus." Christians need to understand that the Catholic Church is not referring to the Lord Jesus Christ when they say "Jesus," nor are they referring to the Mary in the Bible when they say "Mary," but rather, they worship the same gods as the pagans of Rome. (The name "Mary" has become just another name for the goddess of witches, and I'll demonstrate that in Chapter 6.)

It would take many volumes of books to talk about every aspect of political debate and religious heresy that was going on at the time the Roman Catholic Church was formed, which was the claimed purpose of forming an "ecumenical church." For example, Arianism was a belief picked up by a large number of heretics that claimed Jesus Christ was a created being, but not God Himself (which is what Jehovah's Witnesses believe today). However, for the purpose of this teaching, none of that matters. What matters is that the Council of Nicea claimed to establish a set of beliefs that would be permanently labeled as "Christian" doctrine, but this was done under the pretense of bringing all under the authority of Rome, and the path that begins in pagan idolatry only ends in death and destruction, which we will see as we go over more Catholic history later.

Though Catholics (and other heretical church organizations around the world) will typically praise the Council of Nicea, the newly formed Catholic Church was the beginning of centuries of torture and death against those born again in Christ. (We'll learn more about that in Chapter 8.) The Council developed what's known as the "Nicene Creed," which states:  "I believe in one God, the Father almighty, maker of heaven and earth, of all things visible and invisible. I believe in one Lord Jesus Christ, the Only Begotten Son of God, born of the Father before all ages. God from God, Light from Light, true God from true God, begotten, not made, consubstantial with the Father; through him all things were made. For us men and for our salvation he came down from heaven, and by the Holy Spirit was incarnate of the Virgin Mary, and became man. For our sake he was crucified under Pontius Pilate, he suffered death and was buried, and rose again on the
third day in accordance with the Scriptures. He ascended into heaven and is seated at the right hand of the Father. He will come again in glory to judge the living and the dead and his kingdom will have no end. I believe in the Holy Spirit, the Lord, the giver of life, who proceeds from the Father and the Son, who with the Father and the Son is adored and glorified, who has spoken through the prophets. I believe in one, holy, catholic and apostolic Church. I confess one Baptism for the forgiveness of sins and I look forward to the resurrection of the dead and the life of the world to come. Amen."


Some of you Christians out there might be fooled by this because after reading it, you might agree with most of it. I too agree with most of it. The problem is not the profession of belief, but the lack of righteous judgment over the fruits and leaven of the people who created this creed, and that fact that they did not believe what they were writing.

Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.
- John 7:24

(Read "Unbiblical Cop-Outs: Don't Judge Me!" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The Lord Jesus Christ warned His disciples that they should beware the leaven, which means the doctrine. The Pharisees and Saducees all claimed to believe in the Hebrew God, just as the Catholics do today, but it was their doctrine that was dangerous:

Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees... Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.
- Matthew 16:6-12

A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.
- Galatians 5:9

Remember, even the devils believe and tremble, and they can transform themselves to appear outwardly as followers of Christ and ministers of righteousness:

Thou believest that there is one God; thou dost well: the devils also believe, and tremble.
- James 2:19

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.
- 2 Corinthians 11:13-15

This means someone can claim to be of Christ, they can claim to believe in a virgin birth, they can claim to believe in the saving blood of Christ, resurrection from the dead, God in three persons, and everything else the Nicean Creed states—and still NOT be a born again Christian. These people are what I call "false converts," or those who profess the love of God with their mouths, but their hearts are far from God.

(Read "False Converts & Eternal Security" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me.
- Matthew 15:8

Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.
- Matthew 7:16-17

So because the Catholic Church started with a foundation of paganism and idolatry, that means Catholicism will produce pagan and idolatrous fruit; and it has, as we'll see throughout the rest of this book. Typically, we are taught that the world was "Christianized" by the Catholic Church, but what really happened historically is a pagan transition, not a conversion to Christianity.
For example, the Catholic Church restructured, rebuilt, and renamed many famous pagan sites around the world; one of those being the city of Aphrodisias (also called Stauropolis, Caria, and Geyre), a pagan Greek city in which Aphrodite, a pagan sex goddess, was worshipped. (One can only imagine the amount of fornication and sodomy that took place here.) The Catholic Church renamed it "City of the Cross" because they wanted it to appear "Christian" to the masses, while at the same time honoring the site because of its pagan influence. In short, they take wicked abominations against God, slap a "jesus" label on them, and call them "good."


One of the most famous pagan sites in the world, the Pantheon, which was dedicated to Jupiter, Apollo, Mars, Mercury, Neptune, Vulcan, Juno, Minerva, Venus, Diana, Ceres, and Vesta, was also claimed by the Catholic Church as a "holy" site. In 609, Pope Boniface IV converted it to "St. Mary and the Martyrs" Church, and it is a temple that is held sacred to Catholics.


The argument you may hear from the typical Catholic is that these sites were "Christianized," but not only is Catholicism not Christianity (and we'll see Biblical proof of that later), but there is no Biblical mandate to convert pagan traditions and inventions. All throughout the Bible, the Lord God destroyed pagan culture because it had to be cleansed; NEVER did He instruct the Jews or Christians to take what the pagans had created and use it for His glory.

And the LORD spake unto Moses in the plains of Moab by Jordan near Jericho, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye are passed over Jordan into the land of Canaan; Then ye shall drive out all the inhabitants of the land from before you, and destroy all their pictures, and destroy all their molten images, and quite pluck down all their high places:
-Numbers 33:50-52

And when the LORD thy God shall deliver them before thee; thou shalt smite them, and utterly destroy them; thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor shew mercy unto them... But thus shall ye deal with them; ye shall destroy their altars, and break down their images, and cut down their groves, and burn their graven images with fire.
-Deuteronomy 7:2-5

Don't misunderstand, these are not commandments that Christians should go around burning up other peoples' property; this was specifically commanded for the Jewish government to punish the crime of idolatry. The reason the Lord God was so strict against the Hittites, Girgashites, Amorites, Canaanites, Perizzites, Hivites, and Jebusites in those nations/cities is because they were pagans who were rampant in every sin imaginable, including fornication, sodomy (homosexuality), and the blood sacrifice of children unto devils.

(Read "Abortion: Paganism, Satanism, Sacrifices, and Witchcraft" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.
-Matthew 7:18
There is nothing good about these filthy, unholy sites, yet the Catholic Church took them, renamed them to something more pleasing to the ear, and opened them up to the public again. This is not because the Catholic Church cleansed anything, but rather, because the pagan rituals and worship continues in the Catholic Church, just as the aforementioned 23-year veteran ex-Catholic priest Richard Bennett, in his video testimony in the introduction, told us that the training school for priests barely ever opens up the Word of God, but rather, they study the pagan philosophers of Greece. These things are done because the root of the Catholic Church's tree is paganism and corruption, and if the root is corrupt, the tree corrupt, and so the fruit will be corrupt also.

In another example, Pope Paul VI released an official decree called *Nostra Aetate* (i.e. *In This Age of Ours*), which states clearly that other pagan religions, like Buddhism and Hinduism, are accepted in the Catholic Church, and contain a path to perfection, illumination, and truth in philosophy:

"Thus, in Hinduism men explore the divine mystery and express it both in the limitless riches of myth and the accurately defined insights of philosophy. They seek release from the trials of the present life by ascetical practices, profound meditation and recourse to God in confidence and love. Buddhism in its various forms testifies to the way of life by which men can, with confidence and trust, attain a state of perfect liberation and reach supreme illumination either through their own efforts or by the aid of divine help. So, too, other religions which are found throughout the world attempt in their own ways to calm the hearts of men by outlining a program of life covering doctrine, moral precepts and sacred rites. The Catholic Church rejects nothing of what is true and holy in these religions."


As we can see, the Catholic Church does, and always has, embraced pagan doctrines and beliefs, just as Rome has always done. There is nothing true and holy in these false religions with their pagan gods, but the Catholic Church, being of like-mind with their wicked doctrines, declares the heathen to be "brethren," and to that point, I would not disagree; meaning that Hinduism, Buddhism, Islam, and every other flavor of pagan doctrine in between, are all yoked together with the wicked Catholic Church under the leadership of the Devil, and we born again Christians sanctify ourselves (divide ourselves away) from them.

We will see more examples in subsequent chapters that the Catholic Church has been one of the world's primary beacons of fusing paganism with so-called "Christianity," and sadly, the modern-day church buildings and churchgoers have adopted their traditions. From holidays, to ceremonies, building construction, to clergy—most of what we see in the modern "evangelical" or "protestant" church buildings has been adopted from pagan Rome through the Catholic Church, but before we get to all that, I believe it is best that we start by looking at their doctrine.

The purpose of this chapter was to demonstrate that the Catholic Church had a pagan and witchcraft origin, and maintains it to this day; therefore, as we will see later, it has pagan and witchcraft fruit. However, without knowing any of that, we can discern the evil of the Catholic Church by simply looking at their doctrine and comparing it with the Word of God.

#2 – Purgatory: The Imaginary Safety Net

There are many doctrinal errors that make up the foundation of Catholicism, but the Catholic doctrine of "purgatory" is their bread-and-butter, or in other words, it's the biggest money-making scheme in the known world. Without purgatory, Catholicism would struggle to financially flourish as much as they have, and they would be hard-pressed to keep converts coming back.

*But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.*

-1 Timothy 6:9-11

Let's define purgatory from the New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia, which claims to have "full and authoritative information on the entire cycle of Catholic interests, action and doctrine," and is approved and used by the Catholic Church today. It says:
purgatory (n): (Lat., "purgare", to make clean, to purify) in accordance with Catholic teaching is a place or condition of temporal [i.e. temporary] punishment for those who, departing this life in God's grace, are, not entirely free from venial faults, or have not fully paid the satisfaction [i.e. debt] due to their transgressions

So in a nutshell, purgatory is supposed to be a place where people go to work out their sins. Notice that it specifically said that even if you die with God's grace, you still have not paid off your debt. Whatever debt was accumulated through their lifetime by their transgressions against God must be fully paid, and then once the whole debt is paid, they are "cleansed," and then enter heaven.

The Catholic concept of purgatory, namely that God's grace, obtained through repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing) and belief on the blood of Jesus Christ, is not enough to pay debt of sin, is completely contradictory to what the Bible teaches us in the book of Romans:

Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.
-Romans 4:4-5

And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.
-Romans 11:6

grace (n): favor; good will; kindness; the free unmerited love and favor of God
(See 'grace', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Mar 15, 2018,[webstersdictionary1828.com])

Here, Paul is explaining that grace and works cannot exist together to pay the debt of sin. If God has granted you his unmerited love, then works cannot add to that. Either you're under grace, which is salvation to eternal life, or your under works, which is death and hell, but the Catholic Church believes something entirely different than what God's Word tells us.

In short, the Bible teaches us it is not possible to have "God's grace" for your sins, but then be required to also work/suffer for those sins; it's one or the other, but it cannot be both.

When discussing the doctrine of Scripture, I would normally take readers to the section of the Bible that talks about the subject, but in this case, there is no Scriptural backing for purgatory; or in other words, the Catholic Church is not getting this idea from any known verse of Scripture. There is nowhere in the Bible that even remotely mentions such an idea as purgatory, but oddly enough, the Council of Trent (the 19th ecumenical meeting of Catholic leaders to determine official doctrine of their Church) in 1545 claimed that there was Scriptural backing for purgatory:

"Whereas the Catholic Church, instructed by the Holy Ghost, has from the Sacred Scriptures and the ancient tradition of the Fathers taught in Councils and very recently in this General Council that there is a Purgatory, and that the souls therein detained are helped by the suffrages [series of prayers] of the Faithful, but principally by the acceptable Sacrifice of the altar; the Holy Synod [governing body] enjoins on the Bishops that they diligently endeavor to have the sound doctrine of the Fathers in Councils regarding Purgatory everywhere taught and preached, held and believed by the Faithful."

There are a number of lies here, the first being that the "Holy Ghost" is giving them this doctrine, because if it was from the Holy Ghost, it would have been given to John, Luke, Peter, Matthew, Paul, Mark, and all the other apostles in the early days of Christ's church. The second lie is that the Scripture teaches it because, as I already stated, this is nowhere to be found, but there is one point they actually told the truth; the "ancient tradition of the [Catholic] Fathers" taught it, and that's the only place you'll find it.
There's a popular Catholic magazine called *Catholic Answers*, which is officially approved by bishops of the Catholic Church, that says the question of purgatory is one of the "most common single question[s]" they receive at conferences and via email, so Catholic author Tim Staples (priest and graduate of theology at Mount St. Mary's Seminary in Maryland) attempts to answer it. He first states what the Catechism of the Catholic Church (official manual/rulebook of the Catholic Church) says about purgatory, so let's read it from the Vatican website:

"All who die in God's grace and friendship, but still imperfectly purified, are indeed assured of their eternal salvation; but after death they undergo purification, so as to achieve the holiness necessary to enter the joy of heaven."

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "III. The Final Purification, or Purgatory: 1030," retrieved Nov 22, 2017, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p123a12.htm]

After I read that, the first question I asked myself is: "How do you know if you're in God's grace and friendship?" Apparently, Catholics can't figure that out either, which is why *Catholic Answers* gets so many inquiries about it. Furthermore, they are stating that the blood of Christ is not perfect, because, according to Catholic doctrine, even if you have the blood of Christ on your account, you are still "imperfectly purified," which is also a contradiction to the word "pure."

**pure (adj):** free from moral defilement; without spot; not sullied or tarnished; incorrupt

(See 'pure', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Aug 31, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

That means you are either purified perfectly by Christ's blood, or you're not, but the Catholic Church can't figure it out, and thus, they can't figure out who goes to heaven and who doesn't. In fact, we'll find out later (when we get to Chapter 4) that no one, not even the Pope, knows for sure, nor does anyone know for sure if the Pope himself goes to heaven or not.

The following diagram shows the difference between Biblical doctrine and Catholic doctrine:

Staples at *Catholic Answers* continues to give more details:

"Scripture is very clear when it says, "But nothing unclean shall enter [heaven]" (Rev. 21:27). Hab. 1:13 says, "You [God]... are of purer eyes than to behold evil and cannot look on wrong..." How many of us will be perfectly sanctified at the time of our deaths? I dare say most of us will be in need of further purification in order to enter the gates of heaven after we die, if, please God, we die in a state of grace."

It should be mentioned that the Catholic Church uses corrupt bible versions; most commonly the NASV (New American Standard Version). The Catholic Church has been the main source of contention over the bible version issue, and the primary contender against the pure and perfect Word of God in the King James Bible. (Read “Why I Use The King James Bible” here at creationliberty.com for more details on the history of new-age bible versions, and how all of them have a foundation in the corruptions of the Catholic Church.)

Staples, in his article, has denied Christ, just as all Catholics do when they follow that teaching. When the Lord Jesus Christ prayed in John 17, He said:

_Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth._

-John 17:17-19

Jesus prayed for the same sanctification for us that He had while living as a man in this world, and that God the Father would sanctify us through His Word (not Catholic tradition). The main problem is that Staples claims to believe in the Christian God of the Bible, and on the Lord Jesus Christ, but does NOT believe in the power of Christ and the Holy Spirit to sanctify men, and cleanse their spirits of all unrighteousness.

_If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness._

1 John 1:9

Staples does not believe in the Christ's ability to sanctify, and therefore, he cannot believe in Christ's ability to save (which requires sanctification), which means he does NOT believe in Christ of Scripture. Just as the Catholic Church, Staples believes in a false "christ" of tradition, one that cannot purify His flock.

Not only does the Bible tell us that God sanctifies us wholly, without the need for an imaginary safety net, the Bible also tells us that Christ sanctified us ONCE through His sacrifice on the cross. This means there is no need for purgatory if you are born again in Christ.

_By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all._

-Hebrews 10:10

_And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it._

-1 Thessalonians 5:23-24

It is Christ that sanctifies us, not of ourselves, but Staples' faith is in his works, and in Chapter 5, we'll cover more on that because the Catholic Church maintains a works-based doctrine. Notice he also said, "IF... we die in a state of grace," meaning that he, as a Catholic, has no way of knowing if anyone dies in a state of grace or not. (We'll cover more on that in Chapter 4.) This means that Staples believes that he has to work his way into heaven, and that brings us back to "purgatory," the place where the Catholic Church teaches you have to go to work out your sin.

After making those fallacious statements, Staples says:

"In light of this, the truth about Purgatory is almost self-evident to Catholics."


In other words, he just said that there is no evidence, Biblical or otherwise for purgatory, and that Catholics should just believe it anyway; I thank Mr. Staples for helping me prove my point. He says it's "self-evident," which literally means 'needing no explanation'.

**self-evident** (adj): evident without proof or reasoning
(See 'self-evident', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Nov 23, 2017,[webstersdictionary1828.com])
If I were to say, "2 + 2 = 4," that can be proven in the mind without the need for outward proof or reasoning, but if I were to claim "God is a pink hippopotamus," then that would require outward proof or reasoning, specifically from Scripture. Likewise, to say, "There is a mysteriously unexplained place in the spiritual world that people have to suffer to work out their sin," is not something that can be evidenced in the mind without the need for outward proof or reasoning from the Word of God, which means, in a nutshell, Staples' so-called "answer" is: "Purgatory is real. Trust me."

Thus saith the LORD: Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD. 

-Jeremiah 17:5

However, knowing that born again Christians will mark him and point out his fallacious statements, he goes on to attempt to provide some evidence for this so-called "self-evident" belief. (Why do you need evidence if it is self-evident?) He refers to the book of Maccabees, which is an "apocryphal" book that is not the Word of God.

The word 'apocrypha' comes from the word 'apocryphal':

apocryphal (adj): doubtful authorship or authenticity 

What's humorous about this is that the word 'apocrypha' literally means no one can verify if it's true, but the Catholic Church automatically treats the Apocrypha as if it is the Word of God, without any concern for lies and false information. Maccabees is part of the Apocryphal books, which neither Jews nor Christians have ever accepted as part of Scripture because not only does the Apocrypha not claim itself to be God's Word (i.e. they don't say "thus saith the LORD"), but there are numerous false doctrines in those books that contradict the rest of Scripture; for example, in 2nd Maccabees, it says:

"It is therefore a holy and wholesome thought to pray for the dead, that they may be loosed from sins."


Thus, what Maccabees teaches is that we can be justified to enter the Kingdom of God by the works of others; meaning that someone else does the works of prayer to get you a ticket to heaven. That's not what the Bible teaches:

Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God: Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: 

-Romans 3:20-24

The Bible teaches us that the Lord Jesus Christ is our sanctification, our saving grace, and our justification. The Bible did NOT say that we are sanctified by the prayers of others, and it did NOT say that we are justified by a Catholic flogging himself to suffer for the dead. (There are some Catholics who physically whip themselves to try and save the dead from purgatory.) It should be noted that there is nowhere in Scripture where God lays the burden of the salvation of the soul on mankind, nor is there anywhere in Scripture where God has someone pray for the dead that they would be forgiven their sin.

Staples goes on to claim that, because Maccabees says this, therefore, the practice of "praying for the dead" was done commonly in Israel. In fact, I wouldn't argue against that because if you read the Old Testament, most of it is rebuke against the wicked deeds of Israel, how they turned their backs on God and worshipped the gods/goddesses of the pagans, and adopted the pagan traditions, just like the Catholic Church has done, so it would make sense if Israel adopted praying for the dead. However, Staples does not provide evidence of this, he only makes the claim, and furthermore, just because they Jews may have done something like that, does not make it Biblical. Worse still, Staples says, "If Jesus wanted to condemn this teaching commonly taught in Israel, he was not doing a very good job of it," and so Staples is now blaming Christ for his own willful ignorance.
The Bible addresses this matter very simply:

**And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:**
-Hebrews 9:27

This means when a man dies, he goes straight to the judgment, which means there is no purgatory. In addition, there is no place in Scripture where praying for the dead is taught, and God told the Jews quite clearly not to learn the evil ways of the heathen:

**Thus saith the LORD, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them.**
-Jeremiah 10:2

**And he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, after the abominations of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out before the children of Israel.**
-2 Kings 21:2

Israel was commanded not to go after the ways of the heathen, so even if Staples' claim was true (namely, that the Jews practice praying for the dead, which he did not provide evidence for), it would have been because Israel was turning their backs on God. After getting past all the Catholic traditions that he adores and worships, Staples then claims that Jesus taught purgatory doctrine in Matthew 5:

**Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.**
-Matthew 5:25-26

This is the first of many examples we will see in this teaching where Catholics cherry-pick Scripture; meaning that they are selecting words, phrases, and verses taken out of their context in order to support whatever false doctrine they want to teach.

### The Problem With Ignoring Context

The Lord Jesus Christ rebuked Satan for attempting to use Scripture out of its context (Mat 4:1-11), and so we ought not to follow in the footsteps of the Devil. It's interesting to note that people generally don't read things out of context in their everyday reading, like newspapers, books (fiction or non-fiction), etc; but when it comes to the Bible, for some reason, everyone seems to shut off their contextual reading habits.

For example, if one were reading George Washington's famous phrase, "Don't fire until you see the whites of their eyes," one could interpret that to mean many things. Someone might think, "Wow, what a sick, twisted, bloodthirsty psychopath! Washington must have wanted his soldiers to look their enemies right in the face when they died!" That is literally how easy it is to take something out of its context.

In context, Washington and his soldiers were low on ammo and he wanted them to conserve bullets. So to prevent them from missing their shots, he told them to hide behind cover and wait until the enemy was close enough, so they would increase their chances of landing each shot. It's easy to create strange ideas if we leave ourselves open to free-range interpretations instead of looking at the context, and likewise, this is the process by which many cults (like Catholicism) have formed their doctrines.

The Catholic Church claims that Matthew 5:26 is referring to the afterlife, and that purgatory is the prison. They believe that when you go in, you can't come out until you pay what you owe. Let's start in verse 20 to learn the context of these verses:
For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

- Matthew 5:20

It is by the Lord Jesus Christ alone that we can achieve righteousness to enter the Kingdom of God, but Catholics don't put their trust into the Lord Jesus Christ of Scripture; instead, they put their trust into their imaginary concept of purgatory to save them.

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

- Matthew 5:21-24

Jesus is talking about the law; that's why He gave examples of "Thou shalt not kill," and the punishments of the judgment in their society on them for killing. The context is the laws of their society, and the punishments for breaking those laws. The only reason hellfire is mentioned is because "Thou fool" is in reference to a wicked man who has been rightly accused of a crime, and that wicked man calls righteous men "fools" for prosecuting him for his evil deeds.

The parts Jesus mentions about bringing gifts to the altar is talking about the Old Testament traditions of Jewish society, not a secret place Catholics go to work out their sins. In context, Jesus is telling the Jews that if you have done a wrong (committed a crime) against your brother and offended him, then it would be senseless to bring your gift to God until you have righted that wrong, and that when you go to your brother in repentance, you need to agree with him on what he says, otherwise, he may choose to call the guards and have the judge send you to prison. A farthing is money, and that means however much you must pay (i.e. a fine) for the offense of the crime you did against your brother will be paid, and there will be no forgiveness granted until that fine is paid, which is precisely how the legal system works in almost all countries around the world, or in other words, just because you might be saved by the Lord Jesus Christ, doesn't mean you're relieved of your duties to the government.

(Read "False Doctrine: Unlimited Submission to Government" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

There is more evidence of this context in the verses that follow: In verses 27-28, Jesus points out the law about committing adultery, in verse 31-32, Jesus points out the law about divorce, and in verse 33-34, Jesus points out the law about swearing oaths. In all these, He is pointing out what the Jews have heard in the law, and then telling them how they should live with charity and humility; thus, the man who brought his gift to the altar was humbling himself before God in repentance, but Jesus is telling him that he should not forget the man he wronged because God will not save him from a prison cell (on this earth, in society, in the flesh, not a "spiritual" prison) if he does not repent to those he has wronged.

So the typical Catholic will use these two verses, cherry-picked out their context to try and justify their belief in an imaginary spiritual limbo state where you go to work out your sins so you can get into heaven eventually, and that time can be cheated out if you can get someone else still alive on earth to pray, flog themselves, or in many instances, give the Catholic Church money. (We'll discuss more about that in Chapter 4.) Again, because they don't have their faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, and instead put their faith into their own works, purgatory is their only salvation, but because it doesn't exist, there is no salvation for Catholics, and thus, millions and billions of Catholics have died, and will die, with their hopes in a false system that will lead them to hell.
But it's not over because Staples goes on to claim there's an even more clear text in Scripture that proves purgatory, and that's in 1 Corinthians 3:

*For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.*

-1 Corinthians 3:11-15

This is typically considered the best evidence Catholics have for purgatory, but not only is this Catholic cherry-picking once again, it's also extreme Catholic blindness because these verses actually **REBuke** the doctrine of purgatory. Let's start in verse 9:

*For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building. According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.*

-1 Corinthians 3:9-10

In this metaphor, the building represents those of us who are born again in Christ, and the good works of God we perform are an investment in eternity. (e.g. evangelism, charity, alms, prophesying, etc; also the temple of God is the body of the born again elect—1Co 6:19) However, the Word of God points out to us that we should take caution in how we build, that is, in what works we do, because, as Paul points out in verse 11, no other foundation can be laid but in Jesus Christ.

So now that we have a context, it's easier to see the meaning of these verses, and we don't have to come up with wild theories. The works we do for the eternal Kingdom of God will be those of high value, metaphorically represented by gold, silver, and precious stones, but the works we do that are worldly are metaphorically represented by low value substances like wood, hay, and stubble. The high-value substances are metaphorically referenced because they are not destroyed by fire, but the low-value substances are destroyed by fire, therefore, whatever high-value substances are left over is how God will judge what reward we receive; meaning that those who worked righteousness by putting in the time and effort, and taught the truth of His Word will receive great reward, while those who did little will receive little reward.

However, **ONLY** those who have laid the foundation in Jesus Christ will be rewarded because there is no other foundation a man can lay but in Christ. That means when a Catholic, who may have done many works (like alms and charity), puts all his works into the fire, there is no foundation to put the works on, and therefore, it is the same as him never having done any good works in his life. When a man chooses to lay his foundation in purgatory, and teaches others to do so, there will be nothing to try by fire because there was no foundation laid in the first place, and thus, the context of 1 Corinthians 3 rebukes the false doctrine of purgatory.

Staples ends by asking a question, rather than give his "Catholic answer." His question is designed to cast doubt:

"If these 'works' do not represent sins and imperfections, why would they need to be eliminated?"


Of course, his answer is "purgatory," not a Biblical response. This is exactly the method Satan used in the Garden of Eden to trick Eve; he simply asked her questions to try and cast doubt. Staples doesn't want his readers to know there is a Biblical answer in the context itself. He definitely doesn't want them to know that those verses rebuke purgatory, and it serves as a warning that your works will not be considered at all if you have no foundation laid in the Lord Jesus Christ, meaning, it's a warning to Catholics to flee from a church that falsely calls itself "Christian," and come to the Lord Jesus Christ in His Word.

There are other problem verses that Catholic Answers magazine and the Catholic Church do not like to bring up when discussing this topic. For example, Jesus Christ clearly stated:

*For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.*

-Matthew 6:14-15
If a Catholic dies without forgiving a man his trespasses, that means when he goes to purgatory, he would be stuck there forever. It's not a sin he can work off because God said he would not forgive it. Unless a Catholic wants to say God lied, God was confused, or that it's really not God's Word, then there is no way around this one without abandoning the doctrines of the Catholic Church.

**But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.**

-Romans 5:8-9

If we are justified by the blood of Christ, then we do not have to go to purgatory to be justified. This is what is called a contradiction; the Catholic teaching contradicts the Word of God, and thus, you have to choose which one you will serve.

**No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.**

-Matthew 6:24

The Bible tells us that Jesus Christ is the propitiation for our sins:

**And he [i.e. Jesus Christ] is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.**

-1 John 2:2

propitiation (n): the atoning sacrifice offered to God to assuage his wrath and gain his favor

(See 'propitiation', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Nov 23, 2017,[webstersdictionary1828.com])

Thus, we do not need a purgatory to be a propitiation for our sins when we have the blood of Jesus Christ on our account. The reason Catholics need purgatory is because they do NOT have the blood of Jesus Christ on their accounts, and they believe they will be saved by their works of suffering in purgatory.

The Catholic Church teaches that grace must be earned by works, by the sufferings done in purgatory, but the Bible says that grace must come through faith, and not of our works:

**For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.**

-Ephesians 2:8-9

However, the Catholic Church tells us that anyone who does not believe in purgatory is damned to hell, and I'll explain why. This is from the Council of Trent, the ecumenical authority of the Catholic Church:

"If any one saith, that, after the grace of Justification has been received, to every penitent sinner the guilt is remitted, and the debt of eternal punishment is blotted out in such wise, that there remains not any debt of temporal punishment to be discharged either in this world, or in the next in Purgatory, before the entrance to the kingdom of heaven can be opened (to him): let him be anathema."


The common argument from Catholics is that the word "anathema" does not mean a damnation to hell. They try to put on a facade that makes people feel like the Catholic Church is a warm and fluffy religion.

anathema (n): a person dested or loathed; accursed to damnation or destruction

The Catholic Church requires you to be a part of their ecumenical movement, otherwise, you don't go to purgatory, and therefore, you can't work out your sin to get to heaven. It doesn't take a theology degree to figure out what this means: If you aren't part of the Catholic Church (i.e. to take part in the Mass, as we'll see in the next chapter), then you can't work out your sin, and if you can't work out your sin, then you can't go to purgatory to finish it all up, and that's an automatic condemnation to hell. Most Catholics may not like that, but it's a fact of Catholic doctrine, and one that is rarely talked about within Catholic circles; they believe that if you don't believe in purgatory, you're an anathema, and if you're an anathema, you go to hell.

The Catechism of the Catholic Church clearly states:

"The teaching of the Church affirms the existence of hell and its eternity. Immediately after death the souls of those who die in a state of mortal sin descend into hell, where they suffer the punishments of hell, 'eternal fire.' The chief punishment of hell is eternal separation from God, in whom alone man can possess the life and happiness for which he was created and for which he longs."

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, Part 1, Section 2, Chapter 3, Article 12, "IV Hell," Canon #1035, retrieved Mar 21, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ENG0015/_P2O.HTM]

As we'll see in the next chapter, in order to gain God's grace, you must be a part of the Catholic Church. So, to anathema a person means they are no longer accepted within the Catholic Church, and therefore, because they are not in God's grace, would end up in hell for eternity.

The contradiction here is that even though Catholics have no idea if they're in God's grace or not, they would quickly anathemize people like me (assuming they follow the decrees of Catholicism), but then turn around and say that atheists will end up in heaven after they spend enough time in purgatory. I know that sounds absurd, but I'm not kidding; this is exactly what they teach.

(Read "Everything You Need To Know About Atheism" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Charles Grondin, ordained priest who also writes for Catholic Answers, responds to the inquiry, "Can an atheist go to heaven?" He says:

"If, however, because of circumstances a sincere person is prevented from coming to belief in God, then his lack of faith is called invincible ignorance, and such a person would not be considered culpable, [deserving of blame]"


I have to pause this quote to point out that the Bible teaches the opposite. There is no such thing as "invincible ignorance," but rather, atheists hold the truth in unrighteousness, they don't have an excuse, and become WILLINGLY ignorant, meaning that they don't know and they don't want to know because they hate the Christian God of the Bible.

For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

-Romans 1:18-22

Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:

-2 Peter 3:3-5

While Catholics sit around hoping that purgatory will save their atheist neighbors and family, we who are born again in Christ, knowing the terror of the Lord, and knowing what awaits an atheist in hell and the lake of fire, work to persuade them to the truth; just as we work to persuade Catholics for the same reason.
For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad. Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences.
-2 Corinthians 5:10-11

The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.
-2 Peter 3:9

Grondin continues:
"As Pope Pius XI [1922-1939] noted in Quanto conficiamur moerore: 'It is known to us and to you that those who are in invincible ignorance of our most holy religion, but who observe carefully the natural law, and the precepts graven by God upon the hearts of all men, and who being disposed to obey God lead an honest and upright life [i.e. works-based doctrine], may, aided by the light of divine grace, attain to eternal life; for God who sees clearly, searches and knows the heart, the disposition, the thoughts and intentions of each, in his supreme mercy and goodness by no means permits that anyone suffer eternal punishment, who has not of his own free will fallen into sin."

In short, they believe that atheists go to heaven so long as they do "good works." Notice that there is no mention of the name of the Lord Jesus Christ; this is because Catholics don't really believe in the Christian God of the Bible, rather, they believe in a different "god," and call him "jesus."

For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.
-Romans 10:13

They believe that by good works, a man can enter heaven by being a righteous person, but the Bible tells us:

As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:
-Romans 3:10

For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;
-Romans 3:23

He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.
-1 John 5:12

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.
-John 14:6

The Bible makes it very clear that no man, save Christ Himself (who is God), has lived without sin; no man has lived righteously his whole life. The Lord Jesus Christ said specifically that He is the only way to get to God the Father. If you're a Catholic, you need to make a decision about where you stand: Either Jesus Christ is lying, or the Catholic Church is lying, and the Bible tells us which one it is:

In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;
-Titus 1:2
Billy Graham & Robert Schuller: Agents of the Catholic Church

Billy Graham (died 2018) and Robert Schuller (died 2015), both were huge supporters of the Catholic Church, and worked together with Catholics on a regular basis. Because of their Catholic-like beliefs, they both openly supported the Catholic ecumenical movement, and even went one step further to state that those who don't believe on the name of Jesus are still a part of Christ's church and are going to heaven.

(Read "Wolves in Costume: Billy Graham" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Heretics Unite: Billy Graham & Robert Schuller

https://youtu.be/4TTGTZIX3fo

At this point, it should be easy for Christians to see this is a doctrine of devils. It's quite fitting that Schuller said there was a "wideness in God's mercy," because God's Word tells us it is the path to hell that is wide:

\[
\text{Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat:}
-\text{Matthew 7:13}
\]

If you are person that is attending a Catholic Church and does not believe in purgatory, then you need to acknowledge that purgatory is a \textit{REQUIRED} belief to be a member of the Catholic Church. You also need to acknowledge that if you choose to believe what the Bible says, the Catholic Church will condemn you the same as it condemns me and the rest of Christ's church.

\[
\text{Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.}
-\text{Matthew 5:11}
\]

Thus, if you are attending a Catholic Church, you need to come out from among them and be separate; sanctifying yourself (i.e. dividing yourself from them), so the Lord God can receive you as His child.

(Read "The Biblical Understanding of Sanctification" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

\[
\text{Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.}
-\text{2 Corinthians 6:14-18}
\]

Sadly, over the years, I have received many emails from Catholics seeking to argue their beliefs in purgatory, claiming that the Catholic Church is the authority unto which all Christians should submit themselves, but according to the Catholic Church, I should not be receiving ANY emails from Catholic parishioners. Catholic commentary on Canon Law is very clear on the matter; Catholics need to get the Holy See's permission to email me any disputes concerning Catholic doctrine:

"\text{Catholics shall not enter into any disputes or conference with non-Catholics, especially public ones, without the permission of the Holy See or in urgent cases of the local ordinary [Catholic bishop].}"
-\text{Stanislaus Woywod, The New Canon Law: A Commentary and Summary of the New Code of Canon Law, J.F. Wagner, 1918, p. 272-273, [Ohio State University]; Woywod was a Catholic priest and his preface was written by a professor of Canon Law at a Catholic University in Washington.}

I give thanks to the Lord God if you are a Catholic who is reading all this, but it's important that you fully understand it. I would pray that you continue to research more and consider what it is the Catholic Church really believes, and I hope you'll keep reading to learn why they are so far from the Word of God.
#3 – Mass/Eucharist: Never-Ending Blood Sacrifices

One of the most offensive practices the Catholic Church performs in direct opposition against the Lord Jesus Christ is the tradition of "transubstantiation" in what the Catholics call the "Mass." For those of you not familiar with Catholic terms, we need to make sure we understand a few words:

**mass** (n): the celebration of the Eucharist


Most people have heard of a "Catholic Mass," and it is a gathering of Catholics into a Catholic temple to participate in the celebration of what they call the "Eucharist," where they claim to "consecrate" the "sacraments" of the Eucharist.

**eucharist** (n): the sacrament of Holy Communion; the sacrifice of the Mass

**sacrament** (n): the consecrated elements of the Eucharist, especially the bread; an outward sign combined with a prescribed form of words and regarded as conferring some specific grace upon those who receive it

**consecrate** (v): to make or declare sacred or hallowed in service of a deity


The "sacraments" are words and actions that the Catholic Church believes all people must speak and perform in order to gain the grace of God, or in simple terms, it's a works-based false doctrine, meaning that you have to do the works performed to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. This is why most of these terms (all of them except the word "consecrate") are not found in the Bible; they are man-made traditions, not Biblical instructions. They claim to "consecrate the elements of the Eucharist," which means that they take a wafer and wine, say a prayer over them, and believe they have been **LITERALLY** transformed into the **PHYSICAL** body and blood of Christ.

**transubstantiation** (n): the changing of the elements of the bread and wine, when they are consecrated in the Eucharist, into the body and blood of Christ


So in summary, the Eucharist is the Catholic Mass, where all the Catholics get together and watch a Catholic priest do some ritualistic prayers over round wafer pieces and some wine to supposedly "transform" them (otherwise known as "transubstantiation"). Then, one by one, all the Catholics come up, receive a wafer on their tongue, and then **they all drink alcoholic wine** from the same cup (that gets wiped off with each use, but still—kind of gross), and they believe that they ate the **LITERAL** body (not metaphorically) and drank the **LITERAL** blood of Christ.

By consuming these things, they believe they receive the grace of God, even though they don't know how much grace they have to receive to get out of purgatory. However, they believe that if they keep going to mass over and over and over, eventually, they'll rack up enough grace points to enter heaven; very similar to a "rewards card" you might get at a restaurant, but the only difference is that to get the reward, you don't know how many times you have to do the required action.
The Catholic Catechism, which is the official rulebook of the Catholic Church set forth by a council appointed and approved by Pope John Paul II in 1992, states: "At the Last Supper, on the night he was betrayed, our Savior instituted the Eucharistic sacrifice of his Body and Blood. This he did in order to perpetuate the sacrifice of the cross throughout the ages until he should come again."

- Catechism of the Catholic Church, Crown Publishing Group, 2nd Edition, 2012, ISBN: 9780307953704; See also Catechism of the Catholic Church, Part 2, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 3, Canon #1323, retrieved Mar 20, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p2s2c1a3.htm]

**perpetual (adj): continuing forever**

Notice specifically that they claim it was on the night Christ was betrayed, that He "perpetuated" the sacrifice of the cross, or in other words, they believe He gave the works of transubstantiation and the Eucharist to be an everlasting covenant to gain God's grace. This is a lie that has deceived billions of people.

> And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

- Luke 22:19

This act of consuming bread and wine from the Passover supper (commonly known as the "Last Supper") before Christ went to the cross is commonly referred to as "communion," based on 1 Corinthians 10:

> The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

- 1 Corinthians 10:16

Though Catholics may tell you that they do "communion" just like everyone else, that is not true because the Eucharist of the Catholics in their Mass is far different than communion, and it's performed under completely different doctrine.

Catholics believe that they can only receive God's grace if they perform the Eucharist, because they believe that they may only be reconciled to God through transubstantiation, but that's not what the Bible teaches us:

> And that he [Jesus] might reconcile both [Jew and Gentile] unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby:

- Ephesians 2:16

To reconcile is to gain one's favor or grace in union and friendship, which is not attained through the works of communion, but rather, it is gained by grace (a gift) through faith, as Ephesians 2 says a few verses earlier:

> For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:

- Ephesians 2:8

> And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.

- Colossians 1:20

> Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross:

- Colossians 2:14
The Catholic Church has always taught contrary to the Word of God on this subject, and just so there's no confusion about it, let's read what the Council of Trent decreed:

"He [Jesus Christ] offered up to God the Father His own body and blood under the species of bread and wine; and, under the symbols of those same things, He delivered (His own body and blood) to be received by His apostles."


Christians need to understand this point: If this was true, then there was absolutely no need for Christ to go to the cross at all. If Christ gave His sacrifice of body and blood at the Passover feast with His disciples, then why did He need to offer His body and blood a second time at the cross? It doesn't make sense because the Bible tells us that Christ offered up Himself ONCE, but the Catholic Church is telling us He did it twice; thus, there's obviously a contradiction.

Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.  
-Hebrews 7:27

This is not a matter that's up for debate. The Bible very plainly states that Christ sacrificed himself one time on the cross for all:

By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.  
-Hebrews 10:10-14

Christ offered Himself ONE TIME for all sin, which means the Catholic Church denies Christ by claiming that forgiveness of sin can come through another sacrifice in the Mass, which is what Pope John Paul II believed and taught: "The Eucharist is above all else a sacrifice. It is the sacrifice of the Redemption and also the sacrifice of the New Covenant."  

Again, Hebrews 10:11 stated very simply that other sacrifices, like those done in the Catholic Mass, "can never take away sins," but the Catholic Church teaches the opposite. The Catholic Catechism also says:

"At the Last Supper, on the night he was betrayed, our Savior instituted the Eucharistic sacrifice of his Body and Blood. This he did in order to perpetuate the sacrifice of the cross throughout the ages until he should come again, and so to entrust to his beloved Spouse, the Church, a memorial of his death and resurrection: a sacrament of love, a sign of unity, a bond of charity, a Paschal banquet 'in which Christ is consumed, the mind is filled with grace, and a pledge of future glory is given to us.'"  
-Catechism of the Catholic Church, Part 2, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 3, "The Sacraments of the Eucharist," Canon #1323, retrieved Mar 16, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p2s2c1a3.htm]

Earlier, we learned that 'perpetuate' means to "continue forever," so what the Catholic Church believes is that the sacrifice Christ made on the cross continues on forever THROUGH THE CATHOLIC EUCHARIST; meaning they are offering new sacrifices continually in their Mass. This is false doctrine. As we just read, the Bible teaches clearly that Christ's sacrifice on the cross was done once, and that is enough; no other works, ceremonies, or sacrifices done by Catholic priests can offer salvation or grace, and by denying that Christ's one-time sacrifice was enough, Catholics deny Christ's sacrifice. (i.e. They will end up in hell without Christ.)

In summary, because they believe the wine they drink is the LITERAL blood of Christ, the Catholic Church teaches that you must drink Christ's blood over and over in order to maintain eternal life. If you think about it, that's no different than the demonic concept of a vampire.
Even if they were drinking literal blood, the early church in the book of Acts established that we, as born again Christians, were to avoid eating or drinking blood:

But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood.
-Acts 15:20

Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things. But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat.
-Genesis 9:3-4

It shall be a perpetual statute for your generations throughout all your dwellings, that ye eat neither fat nor blood.
-Leviticus 3:17

In the Old Testament, the sacrifices made by the Jews for the atonement of sin had the blood drained out of them (Lev 4:7), the meat cooked, and the Levites did not consume the blood with the eating of the meat. This is one of the few ordinances that continues in the New Testament because we are to respect the blood of life (Lev 17:11). The Catholic Church ignores these commandments of Scripture and continue to instruct their followers to drink blood, which isn't really blood, but they claim it's blood, under the appearance of it not being blood.

Let's suppose that the Lord Jesus Christ performed the miracle of turning water into wine, but He made it appear to be water by sight, taste, and smell; would they have still called it a miracle without evidence a miracle had taken place? Would the people have called it a miracle if Peter and John had, through the power of Christ, lifted up the lame man to walk, but under the appearance that he could not walk? No one would ever believe that a miracle had been performed without evidence that a miracle had occurred, and that shows us the extreme absurdity of Catholicism in their willingness to believe in a miracle without evidence.
I don't need more faith to believe the Catholic wine turns to blood, and that's because the Spirit of God within me prevents me from putting my faith into a lie. Rather, it is the Catholic who needs to put their faith into the truth of God, namely, that their wine is just wine, Catholic priests are teaching doctrines of devils, and that one cannot drink the cup of God and cup of devils at the same time.

Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

-1 Corinthians 10:21

Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;

-1 Timothy 4:1

There is a fallacy among church buildings to say, "I take the Bible as literally true from cover to cover." This is error because the Lord God uses many metaphors in His Word to help us more easily understand His doctrine. This is why I prefer to say, "I take the Bible seriously from cover to cover."

When the Lord Jesus Christ tells us that we born again Christians are His "sheep" (John 20:27), He does not mean we are literal sheep that have wool and must be literally herded around a meadow. When Christ says He is the door (John 10:7), are we to believe that He is literally made of wood and has hinges? It would be absurd to believe such things. Likewise, when Christ said the bread and wine was His body and blood, it is a metaphorical reference, not a literal one; it is His shed blood on the cross that is the literal sacrifice.

It should be noted that the Catholic Church has condemned to damnation and destruction anyone who denies that the wafer and alcohol they give people is the LITERAL body and blood of Christ:

"If any one saith, that, in the sacred and holy sacrament of the Eucharist, the substance of the bread and wine remains conjointly [united] with the body and blood of our Lord Jesus Christ, and denieth that wonderful and singular conversion of the whole substance of the bread into the Body, and of the whole substance of the wine into the Blood-the species Only of the bread and wine remaining-which conversion indeed the Catholic Church most aptly calls Transubstantiation; let him be anathema."


Simply put, they just said if you don't believe that the Catholic priest transforms the wafer and alcohol into the LITERAL body and blood of Christ, you're damned to hell. As we mentioned in the last chapter, an anathema results in death and damnation in hell because once someone is anathemized, then they are no longer part of the Catholic Church, and if they can't do the sacraments of the Eucharist, then they can't gain God's grace, and therefore, they cannot enter heaven. Even though the wafer and alcohol is obviously just a wafer and alcohol, if you don't believe that they are transformed into the LITERAL body and blood of Christ, the Catholic Church will kick you out and condemn you to hell.

Thus, a Catholic's faith is not in the Word of God, but rather, their faith is founded in the traditions and doctrines of men set forth by the Catholic Church. Catholics claim with their mouths to believe on Jesus Christ, but in practice, their hearts are far from him because they follow after the commandments of men:

This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

-Matthew 15:8

If you are kicked out of their wicked cult for following the Word of God, then you should rejoice:
Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

-Matthew 5:12

If the blood/wine explanation of the Catholic Church wasn't confusing enough, because the blood sacrifice might offend some people, the Catechism of the Catholic Church will say it's the blood of Christ, but then turn around in contradictory fashion and say it's an "unbloody" sacrifice:

"The sacrifice of Christ and the sacrifice of the Eucharist are one single sacrifice: The victim is one and the same: the same now offers through the ministry of priests, who then offered himself on the cross; only the manner of offering is different. And since in this divine sacrifice which is celebrated in the Mass, the same Christ who offered himself once in a bloody manner on the altar of the cross is contained and is offered in an unbloody manner... this sacrifice is truly propitiatory."


Even the Catholic Catechism says Christ "offered himself once," but they contradict themselves to say that there was another offering that was unbloody. This also violates Biblical doctrine because the Bible says that there is no offering for sin without the shedding of blood, which means that if it is an "unbloody sacrifice," it can have no relevance to God's saving grace.

And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

-Hebrews 9:22

So the Bible tells us that without the shedding of blood, God is not appeased, but the Catholic Church teaches us that God is appeased without the shedding of blood. This is a simple matter of either you put your faith and trust into the Catholic Church, or you put your faith and trust into God's Word.

And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.

-Joshua 24:15

The Council of Trent goes on to point out that these "unbloody" sacrifices must be done not only for the living, but also for those in purgatory:

"The fruits indeed of which oblation [sacrificial offering], of that bloody one [Christ on the cross] to wit [namely], are received most plentifully through this unbloody one [Catholic Mass]; so far is this (latter) from derogating [inferior] in any way from that (former oblation). Wherefore, not only for the sins, punishments, satisfactions, and other necessities of the faithful who are living, but also for those who are departed in Christ, and who are not as yet fully purified, is it rightly offered, agreeably to a tradition of the apostles."


To make sure we understand what they're saying, they claim that Christ's blood shed on the cross is received through Catholic Mass, and they also claim that the Catholic Mass is equivalent to Christ's sacrifice on the cross; neither of which is Biblical. What's interesting is that they refer to the dead in purgatory as those "who are departed in Christ," which makes no sense because if they were departed in Christ, but Christ's sacrifice on the cross was not enough payment for sin to unite them with Christ, then logically following, the Catholic Mass, which they say is equivalent to Christ's sacrifice, would also not be enough payment for sin.

To say that there is another sacrifice required, outside of the blood sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ, is to DENY Christ; thus, the Catholic Church denies the Lord Jesus Christ. As we read earlier, the Bible tells us very clearly that Jesus offered Himself as a sacrifice ONCE, and that the priests who stand around in the temples (like those in Catholicism) are wasting everyone's time and money, and I'll quote it again:

Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

-Hebrews 7:27
The Catholic Dictionary, written by a life-long Catholic priest who was trained in Rome, and approved by the Catholic Church, states:

"As defined by the Church at the Council of Trent, in the Mass, 'The same Christ who offered himself once in a bloody manner on the altar of the Cross, is present and offered in an unbloody manner.' Consequently, the Mass is a truly propitiatory [forgiveness of sins] sacrifice, which means that by this oblation [religious offering] "the Lord is appeased, He grants grace and the gift of repentance, and He pardons wrouendoings and sins, even grave ones. For it is one and the same victim. He who now makes the offering through the ministry of priests and he who then offered himself on the Cross. The only difference is the manner of offering."


The Council of Trent tells us that it is the works of the Eucharist in the Catholic Mass by which God forgives sin. This is completely anti-biblical; as we've already read that sin cannot be forgiven, and God cannot be appeased, except by the blood of Jesus Christ alone.

Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot... Who by him do believe in God, that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory; that your faith and hope might be in God.

-1 Peter 1:18-21

Also note that the Council of Trent says that "the only difference is the manner of offering," meaning that they believe that Christ's shed blood on the cross is the same sacrifice as the Eucharist in the Catholic Mass. I once read a Catholic priest responding to a Catholic's question on this very issue, in which he attempts to persuade the parishioner that the Mass was only to bond people with Christ, but as we can see, that is not even close to what the Catholic Church teaches. (i.e. Catholic priests commonly teach in ignorance or lies, working tirelessly to cover up the obvious contradictions of papal decree.)

It is abomination in the sight of God to keep making sacrifices when His Son already finished the work. The Catholic Church may as well be slapping God in the face to say, "Your Son's sacrifice is not enough, we need to do more." This is the beginning of the works the Catholic Church requires from the members of its laity, teaching them they must do works to gain more grace, when the Bible says we receive grace by our faith, the payment for our punishment is paid in full, and NO AMOUNT OF WORKS will earn you forgiveness of sin.

For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.

-Ephesians 2:8-9

This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

-Hebrews 10:16-18

It's either by grace, or by works, but it can't be both, and if we rely on the Catholic Mass to give us grace, we will end up in hell:

And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

-Romans 11:6

If we say we have grace, but grace must come through participation in the Catholic Mass, then it is not grace. Through the Catholic Mass, they do works which means that it is something they have done to earn salvation.

Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

-Romans 4:4
If it's not a gift, then it's not grace. Furthermore, if it's a gift that must be maintained by continually doing the work over and over, then it's nowhere near grace. To say one receives grace through works is a complete contradiction, and denies the one, final, ultimate sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ on the cross.

Because the Catholic Church teaches very strictly that the Mass is a sacrifice, then it doesn't matter what they say, they have denied the fact that Christ said "this do in REMEMBERANCE of me," and not "this do to get your loved ones out of purgatory." The Mass is viewed by Catholics as a way to get bonus points to keep themselves out of purgatory, but the Catholic Church, in places of greater population, hold daily masses whereby people can come in and help get their dead friends and relatives out of purgatory.


Despite the clear teachings in the New Testament, the Catholic Church believes that this transubstantiated Eucharist is a sacrifice that needs to be made repeatedly, and you must come to their priests and give your money to them in order to receive the benefits of it. (We'll cover this in more detail when we get to indulgences.) They take away the reliance on the Lord Jesus Christ and put a false priesthood in His place, bringing men and women into bondage.

If you believe the following verses, the Catholic Church has cursed you to damnation and destruction:

**But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.**

-Hebrews 10:12-14

**Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.**

-Hebrews 9:12

**So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many;**

-Hebrews 9:28

**For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:**

-1 Peter 3:18

**Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.**

-Jude 1:3

The Council of Trent clearly states that if you believe what the Bible says, that the sacrifice of Christ was paid once for all on the cross, then you are damned:

"If any one saith, that in the mass a true and proper sacrifice is not offered to God: or, that to be offered is nothing else but that Christ is given us to eat; let him be anathema."


Though the Bible teaches us that the priests offering daily sacrifices over and over for the sins of the people is vain and can never take away sins, the Catholic Church tells us that if you believe what the Bible says on that matter, then you are damned:

"If any one saith, that by those words, Do this for the commemoration of me (Luke xxii. 19), Christ did not institute the apostles priests; or, did not ordain that they, and other priests should offer His own body and blood; let him be anathema."

In short, the Catholic Church is calling "evil" that which is good, and calling "good" that which is evil:

**Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!**

-Isaiah 5:20

On the rare occasion that a Catholic would be reading this, you need to recognize that these are the decrees of the religion in which you believe. If it bothers you that the Bible teaches the exact opposite of the Catholic Church, then I encourage you to keep reading in the hopes that you may come to repentance and faith in the Christian God of the Bible, to be freed from the chains of Catholic bondage. Though the Catholic Church makes vain threats of damnation and destruction, real damnation and destruction will fall on all those who die without the Lord Jesus Christ.

**He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.**

-1 John 5:12

**For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.**

-1 Corinthians 1:18

---

#4 – Indulgences: Bonus Points for Heaven

For those of you unfamiliar with Catholic teaching, let's look at a general definition of indulgences:

**indulgence**: a partial remission of the temporal punishment, esp. purgatorial atonement, that is still due for a sin or sins; a declaration by church authorities that those who say certain prayers or do good deeds will have some of their punishment in purgatory remitted


Indulgences are what a Catholic must say and/or do in order to reduce their time in purgatory, which means in order to believe in indulgences, once must believe in purgatory, and as we'll see later, the doctrine of indulgences is a required Catholic belief. (I emphasize that because I've had some Catholics tell me they don't believe in indulgences, which, as we'll see later, means they are defying the Catholic Church.) Again, the Bible states very clearly for us that there are no magic words in a prayer that can take away sins because there is no work we can do for the remission of sins:

**For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.**

-Ephesians 2:8-10

Notice that Ephesians says that we are ordained (appointed) to do good works, but not that good works pays the price of sin. As we already covered in the last chapter on the Catholic Mass, we either have grace, or we have works, but we can't have both because grace is a free gift given by God, and so for Catholics to believe in works doctrine means they are rejecting the grace of God. (i.e. They'll end up in hell with their hopes in false doctrine.)

During the 16th century, the Word of God was finally compiled by Christians (apart from the Catholic Church) and put in the common English language (prior to this, the Catholic Church kept the Bible from the people and put it in Latin, which few commoners understood), and once people got to read the Bible for themselves, a large number of them left the Catholic Church. This is known in European history as "The Reformation." Former Catholics left the Roman Church over offenses of the Mass and transubstantiation, and also because of the extortion taking place by the practice of indulgences.

In the chapter on Purgatory, I mentioned that it was the biggest money-making doctrine for the Catholic Church, being foundational for their profits. Selling indulgences is how they made that money, and that love of money is best expressed by the famous saying of Johann Tetzel (commissioned by Pope Leo X in the early 16th century):
"As soon as the coin in the coffer rings, the soul from purgatory springs."

Simply put, this phrase is saying, "Give us money, and your dead friends and relatives will go to heaven." This is a very clear example of what the Bible talks about concerning "the love of money."

And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

-1 Timothy 6:8-10

Not only does the concept of indulgences reject the faith in Christ's shed blood on the cross for the sins of man, but the Catholic Church has devoured the houses widows, meaning that their husbands die, and to get their husbands' souls out of purgatory, they spend their retirement paying the Catholic Church to give them indulgences.

Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts; Which devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

-Luke 20:46-47

The reason this issue is so rarely talked about today is because in the past few decades, the Catholic Church backed off advertising indulgences (likely due to political reasons), even though they still offered them, but according to a 2009 *New York Times* article, the Catholic Church is starting to emphasize them again:

"'Why are we bringing it back?' asked Bishop Nicholas A. DiMarzio of Brooklyn, who has embraced the move. 'Because there is sin in the world.'"


The reason this is such a huge money-making scheme for the Catholic Church is because, as we learned earlier, no one knows how many indulgences are needed to get out of purgatory. Even the Catholic Pope doesn't know how long he'll need to be in purgatory. That means, Catholics will do them endlessly throughout their lives, not only for themselves, but also for the dead.

In simple terms, indulgences is a practice of "selling salvation." Though the Catholic Church forbade charging money for indulgences in 1567, which was a political reaction to counter the rebuke from those Christians who flocked away from the Catholic Church during the Reformation, prior to that time, it was required to pay the Catholic Church money for an indulgence.

Antonio Gavin, a former Roman Catholic priest in Saragossa, Spain, gives more details about the prices put on the indulgence of sins/crimes:

"According to a book, called the Tax of the sacred Roman Chancery, in which are contained the exact sums to be levied for the pardon of each particular sin, we find some of the fees to be thus: 'Robbing a church, 2 dollars 25 cents. Simony, 2 dollars 25 cents. Perjury, forgery, and lying, 2 dollars. Robbery, 3 dollars. Burning a house, 2 dollars 75 cents. Eating meat in Lent, 2 dollars 75 cents. Killing a layman, 1 dollar 75 cents. Striking a Priest, 2 dollars 75 cents. Procuring abortion, 1 dollar 50 cents. Dead man excommunicated, 3 dollars. Priest to keep a concubine, 2 dollars 25 cents. Ravishing or deflowering a virgin, 2 dollars. Murder of father, mother, sister, brother or wife, 2 dollars 50 cents. Nun for frequent fornication, in or out of the nunnery, 5 dollars. Marrying on a day forbidden, 10 dollars. All incest, rapes, adultery and
fornication committed by a Priest, with his relations, nuns, married women virgins and his concubines, with the joint pardon of all his whores, at the same time, 10 dollars. Absolution of all crimes together 12 dollars."

-Antonio Gavin, The Great Red Dragon: Or The Master-Key to Popery, Samuel Jones, 1854, p. 263-264, [Harvard University]

I’ll put this in a table so we can read and understand it more clearly:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIN/CRIME</th>
<th>PRICE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Robbing a church</td>
<td>$2.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simony (i.e. <em>trying to turn a profit from sacred things; named after Simon the Sorcerer who attempted to purchase the power of the Holy Spirit with money, Acts 8:18-22</em>)</td>
<td>$2.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perjury (<em>lying under oath</em>), forgery (<em>creating false documents</em>), and lying</td>
<td>$2.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robbery/Theft in general</td>
<td>$3.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burning a house</td>
<td>$2.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eating meat during Lent</td>
<td>$2.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Killing a layman (<em>a person not member of the Catholic clergy</em>)</td>
<td>$1.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Striking (<em>slapping/punching</em>) a Catholic priest</td>
<td>$2.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Procuring (<em>getting an</em>) abortion</td>
<td>$1.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dead man excommunicated (<em>I am still unsure what this meant at the time.</em>)</td>
<td>$3.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Priest to keep a concubine</td>
<td>$2.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ravishing (<em>rape</em>) or deflowering a virgin</td>
<td>$2.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Murder of father, mother, sister, brother or wife</td>
<td>$2.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nun for frequent fornication, in or out of the nunnery</td>
<td>$5.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marrying on a day forbidden</td>
<td>$10.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>All incest, rapes, adultery and fornication committed by a Priest, with his relations, nuns, married women, virgins, and his concubines, with the joint pardon of all his whores, at the same time</td>
<td>$10.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Absolution of all crimes together 12 dollars</td>
<td>$12.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I felt like my brain was going to explode when I read that "simony" was on this list because simony is an offense of trying to turn a profit from sacred things. Indulgences are considered sacred to the Catholic Church. That means they're committing simony to absolve someone of simony. How could someone be so blind as to not see that the Catholic Church is using simony to absolve people of simony?

It's also interesting to compare the different sins in how the Catholic Church rates them; meaning that the higher the price, the more grave the sin. Theft costs more than murder, and marrying on a day forbidden by the Catholic church was over six times more expensive than killing a baby; which makes us question, how wicked are the people creating these standards?
To back up the earlier quote, namely "as soon as a coin in the coffer rings, a soul from purgatory springs," and the pressure that was put on Catholics to pay for these indulgences, the author goes on to say:

"The souls confined in purgatory, for whose redemption indulgences are purchased, as soon as the money tinkles in the chest, instantly escape from that place of torment, and ascend into heaven... the cross erected by the preachers of indulgences was equally efficacious with the cross of Christ itself. 'Lo,' said they, 'the heavens are open: if you enter not now, when will you enter? For twelve pence you may redeem the soul of your father out of purgatory; are you so ungrateful that you will not rescue the soul of your parent from torment? If you had but one coat, you ought to strip yourself instantly, and sell it, in order to purchase such benefit.'"


I would remind Christians that it is not only the Catholic Church which robs people blind by lying to them, but most so-called "Christian" church buildings around the world do the same thing. Through the false teaching on tithe, which is completely unbiblical in the New Testament, and the "storehouse" tithing sermons, the so-called "pastors" of our modern day threaten people with curses from God, telling their congregations that they are "robbing" God if they don't hand over at least 10% of their paychecks to the pastor and the church building every week.

(Read "Is Tithe a Christian Requirement?" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The Catholic Church decreed that those who had paid the fee, and been given an indulgence to absolve their crime, were called "anointed malefactors," and *could NOT be prosecuted by any civil authorities*. Up until the 19th century, when the Catholic Church lost much of its political power in Europe, anointed malefactors was a commonplace issue. Just so there's no confusion, it meant that rapists, thieves, and murderers were getting away with their wicked deeds because they had a priest in their pocket to make them immune from prosecution, meaning that even if the criminals were brought into a courtroom, they would have to be released as innocent men because they had been pardoned by a Catholic priest.

(For examples of anointed malefactors, see *Notes and Queries*, Oxford University Press, 1866, p. 359; See also Henry Worsley, *The Dawn of the English Reformation*, published Elliot Stock, 1890, p. 8)

For example, in the 18th century, German nobles openly voiced complaint about this problem; that they could not jail/execute criminals who were running amok in their lands. Worse still is that some people would go through the process of becoming a cleric of the Catholic Church because the governments in that day could not prosecute them for their crimes; meaning that they would continue to do evil, but simply under the guise of a Catholic priest:

"As long as the clerical character [Catholic priesthood] remained, the person of an ecclesiastic [member of Catholic clergy] was, in some degree, sacred [pure according to Catholic tenets]; and, unless he were degraded [demotion of position] from his office, the unhallowed [impure; not consecrated by the Catholic Church] hand of the civil judge durst not touch him. But as the power of degradation [demotion] was lodged in the spiritual courts [Catholic Church], the difficulty and expense of obtaining such a sentence, too often secured absolute impunity [exemption from punishment] to offenders. Many assumed the clerical character for no other reason than that it might screen them from the punishment which their actions deserved. The German nobles complained loudly that their ANOINTED malefactors, as they called them, seldom suffered capital punishment for the most enormous crimes; and their independence on the civil magistrate is often mentioned in the remonstrances [protests] of the diets [legislative assemblies in government], as a privilege equally pernicious [harmful] to society, and to the morals of the clergy."


The anointed malefactors were everywhere across Europe, but given the title by the German people:

"No man, in short, dared touch the sacred hem of the priest's garment. Unless degraded from his office, he was even above the reach of the civil judge. And hence the reason, why priests were very applicable called, by the Germans, 'anointed malefactors,' and why they came to get into their hands, in that empire, more than one half of the national property."


We'll cover a bit more on the Catholic Church's acquisition of wealth and property in Chapter 12; however, it should be noted that the anointed malefactors was one of the ways the Catholic Church itself was getting away with crimes against the state. They would absolve themselves for murder and theft, by paying themselves, and they would never have to reconcile with the victims.
When I said they were "paying themselves," this is not something to be taken lightly. In our teaching on the modern false doctrines of tithe, I pointed out the hypocrisy of pastors who "set the example" to pay tithe in the church buildings by being the first to stand up and put money in their offering plate, but rarely does anyone stop and consider that his paycheck comes from that money, which really means he's paying himself. Likewise, the Catholic priests were doing the same thing when it came to crimes within their priesthood, which had a much higher rate of payment than they charged the general public:

"If anyone arraigned [called in on criminal charges] in a secular court for robbery or murder could prove his ability to read or write, he was allowed to claim 'benefit of clergy,' and thus to have his cause transferred from the secular to the spiritual court. The greater leniency of ecclesiastical sentences may be argued to have 'done much to uphold a higher standard of humanity'; but a wide door had been thus thrown open to gross abuses. The Roman Chancery had established a graduated scale of fines, according to which by a money payment 'anointed malefactors' could compound for flagrant transgressions. The vow of chastity might be violated for the modest sum of one hundred livres [French currency]. Assassination by a bishop or abbot cost the guilty ecclesiastic three hundred livres. Absolution from murder was assessed to a deacon at twenty crowns." -Henry Worsley, The Dawn of the English Reformation: Its Friends and Foes, Elliot Stock, 1890, p. 8, [University of Wisconsin-Madison]

The prices varied based on the country, but the larger sums for crimes against the Catholic clergy from within were to try and prevent infighting among the clergy, which any cult wants to prevent so there's no division. (Even though Christ said He came to bring division from such wickedness. - Luke 12:51) However, the bottom line is that when they would pay these fines for their crimes, they were paying with money they were given by the general public, to the Catholic Church who supports their financial needs; or in other words, they were just paying themselves to absolve their crimes. (And I would add they only paid these "fines" IF they got caught, which means the fines were more for show than anything else.)

Just because there was a public declaration from the Catholic Church to not charge people for indulgences, the practice continued through the anointed malefactors because the Catholic priests needed a way to continue to get away with their crimes. However, though the price for indulgences was removed for the general public, they were told that they could receive more, or better, indulgences through donations. (i.e. If they can get Catholics to do it, it's still a big money-making practice.)

The problem is that, since the Catholic Church has slowly been rebuilding after they lost a lot of their political and religious influence in the 19th century, the practice of indulgences dropped off. However, as we read earlier in the New York Times article, the Catholic Church is working to bring back indulgences, and it is part of the official doctrine of the Catholic Church, as the 2nd Vatican Council stated:

"The faithful who use with devotion an object of piety (crucifix, cross, rosary, scapular, or medal) after it has been duly blessed by any priest, can gain a partial indulgence. But, if this object of piety is blessed by the Pope or any bishop, the faithful who use it with devotion can also gain a plenary [absolute] indulgence on the feast of the Apostle Peter and Paul, provided they make a confession of faith using any approved formula."


The "object of piety" is actually idolatry, and I would challenge any Catholic to show me where "relics" and blessings over those relics were used by the New Testament church. (i.e. You will only find rebuke of such practices in the New Testament.) We'll cover more on that in Chapter 6, but for now, I will simply point out that the doctrine of indulgences is supposed to be standard operating procedure for Catholics, and for those who practice it, they are deceived into thinking their vain repetitious prayers, alongside their money, will get them into heaven.

But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

-Matthew 6:7

(Read "The Biblical Understanding of Prayer" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

For a Catholic to receive an indulgence, they must repeat a certain prayer a number of times, and these prayers are the same words spoken over and over from memorization. As we just read from the Word of God, that is a heathen (i.e. pagan) practice. Along with this, Catholics are required to participate in the Mass, to do all the antibiblical things listed out in previous chapters, otherwise, their indulgence won't be complete.
To address the differences in indulgences, what the Vatican Council taught is that if you come in to a Catholic temple to get an indulgence from an ordinary priest, you might get a span of time knocked off your purgatory punishment equal to, let's say for example, 1 bonus point. (Whatever a bonus point is worth in time via purgatory.) If you go to a high priest, you might get 5 bonus points. If you go to a high priest on a particular celebration, you might get 15 bonus points, but if you go to a Pope during one of these high celebrations, you might get 100 points, which is why so many Catholics seek out the Pope so desperately when he comes into their town.

Of course, there are many Catholic websites out there that do not want you to understand these facts about their religious beliefs, and they definitely don't like it that preachers like me put it in such simple terms because it makes the whole thing look really silly. The truth is that I didn't make it look silly, it is silly on its own; I don't have to help it look more foolish.

For example, Catholic Online deceives their readers and causes a lot more confusion by telling them that people like myself are teaching error on indulgences:

"If you uncover a holy card or prayer book, you'll notice pious acts or recitation [vain repetition] of prayers might carry an indication of time, such as '300 days' or 'two years.' Most fundamentalists, and even many Catholics, think such phrases refer to how much 'time off for good behavior' you'd get in purgatory. If you perform a pious act labeled as '300 days' partial indulgence,' then you'd spend 300 fewer days in purgatory. It's easy to see how misinformed Catholics might scurry around for years, totaling up indulgences, keeping a little register in which they add up the days. 'Let's see, last year's tally comes to one thousand three hundred twelve years, give or take a week or so, and my lifetime tally is now past the twenty thousand mark. I can cancel out a lot of sinning with this!' Or so some people might think. Well, there are no days or years in purgatory -- or in heaven or hell, for that matter -- and the indication of days or years attached to partial indulgences never meant you'd get that much time off in purgatory."


Let's take Catholic Online's suggestion and look at a standard Catholic prayer card, which I found by simply going online to a Catholic store and finding one:

At the bottom, the prayer card says:

"Indulgences, 5 years, plenary, under usual conditions, for month's recitation."


They say it's "plenary" (i.e. full) instead of "partial" because, as we read earlier, it would have been "blessed" by a Catholic bishop prior to shipment, and that's supposed to knock five years off someone's time in purgatory, whether for the person praying or a dead person who is supposedly already in purgatory. However, Catholic Online says this is error because time doesn't exist in purgatory, and the problem with that is this: if it doesn't involve time, then it's eternal, and if it's eternal, then it can't be "temporal," (i.e. temporary) as the Catholic Catechism says:

"An indulgence is partial or plenary according as it removes either part or all of the temporal punishment due to sin. Indulgences may be applied to the living or the dead."

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "X. Indulgences: What is an Indulgence?" Part 2, Section 2, Chapter 2, Article 4, retrieved Mar 23, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ENG0015/_P4G.HTM]

temporal (adj): of or relating to time

Eternal suffering is called "hell," not purgatory. If purgatory had no time, then what makes it different from hell? The point I'm making is that there are drastic contradictions that exist within Roman Catholic-approved organizations, websites, and temples. One way or another, those five years listed out on the prayer card are meaningless because purgatory doesn't exist, and Catholics waste their time and money on false doctrine that will not save them from hell.

In effort to get Catholics to return to indulgences, the Catholic Church is using social media to make it easier for people to get them; now offering them through Twitter, as reported by USA Today in 2013: "Following Pope Francis' Twitter feed may be good for your soul — both in this life and the next. The spiritual leader of the Roman Catholic Church plans to grant plenary indulgences by Twitter during the World Youth Day, which will be held July 23-28 in Brazil. The indulgences, which Catholics believe can reduce the time a soul spends in purgatory, will be available to Francis' nearly 7.5 million Twitter followers in all languages — if they tune in to World Youth Day broadcasts or take other spiritual actions. To get an indulgence, Catholics must have already had their sins absolved by a priest... Even people who can't travel to a major church event or pilgrimage can still experience that forgiveness... if they take some kind of spiritual action."


Once again, we have the doctrine of works; that in order to get God's forgiveness, they must do a list of deeds. Every false religion in the world teaches those same works doctrines because they know it makes them a lot of money in various ways.

The title of the article we just read from is called, "How You Can Save Your Soul: In 140 Characters or Less," which is a lie from the pit of hell. There are no magic words to say in a prayer to gain's God's grace, nor does it need to be done an endless number of times throughout your life. Salvation is based on repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing) and faith in Christ alone. Indulgences are all based on the idea that you have work off your sin to be justified in the sight of God, but the Bible tells us:

Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

-Galatians 2:16

There may be some Catholics out there who say that they don't believe in indulgences, or that people shouldn't participate in them, but if they claim that, then they are fighting against the official doctrine of Catholic authorities. The Council of Trent states:

"Whereas the power of conferring Indulgences was granted by Christ to the Church; and she has, even in the most ancient times, used the said power, delivered unto her of God; the sacred holy Synod [clergy] teaches, and enjoins [instructs/urges], that the use of Indulgences, for the Christian people most salutary [beneficial], and approved of by the authority of sacred Councils, is to be retained in the Church; and It condemns with anathema those who either assert, that they are useless; or who deny that there is in the Church the power of granting them."


I'll make this very clear: I assert, by the Word of the Living God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, that the Catholic Church is false, they are not Christians, indulgences are useless, and Catholic priests do not have the power to grant them. If you are a practicing Catholic and you do not follow the doctrine of indulgences, then you are an apostate of the Catholic Church, and you need to correct yourself, or better yet, you ought to repent (i.e. having grief and godly sorrow) directly to the Christian God of the Bible, trust in the Lord Jesus Christ for your salvation, and depart from the Roman Devil.

Though I may repeat many of these verses, I do so for emphasis, to remind us that the Bible teaches very clearly you do not need indulgences for forgiveness of sins:

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

-1 John 1:9
So far, the Catholic Church has damned all those who do not believe in the Catholic Mass, transubstantiation, purgatory, and now indulgences. We're only chipping at the iceberg of anathemas the Catholic Church as decreed, and we'll get to more of those later, but for now let's address the works doctrine of the Catholic Church in more detail.

5 – Working For Grace: A Deadly Oxymoron

Though the Catholic Church teaches their parishioners (i.e. one who attends their services) that they must do works to gain the grace of God, but as we will soon see, the phrase "work for grace" is actually an oxymoron.

**oxymoron (n):** a figure of speech by which a locution [i.e. a word or phrase] produces an incongruous [i.e. out of place], seemingly self-contradictory effect, as in 'cruel kindness' or 'to make haste slowly'


First, it is important to understand that grace is a kindness, a gift, that is not earned or deserved. For example, a parent feeding and changing diapers on a child is grace; it is a free gift of kindness that is not earned or deserved by the baby, but is given out of love.

**grace (n):** favor, good will, kindness; the free unmerited love and favor of God

(See 'grace', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Sept 4, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

The Bible tells us the grace of God is a free gift:

> Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.
> -Romans 5:18

As we read in previous chapters, grace is a gift given, not earned, and the New Testament clearly says that you either have grace by a gift, or you have works from which you get a wage that is owed, but you cannot have both. The Bible teaches it is impossible to have the grace of God while claiming that you earned it through your works:

> And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.
> -Romans 11:6

This means God's grace cannot be earned by any works a man can do. God's grace cannot be purchased with a price; it cannot be bought or sold. Salvation is a gift that is given freely by the will of God:

> Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.
> -Romans 5:18

It should be noted that the Lord God only gives His grace to the humble of heart, meaning that one must be repentant (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing). Though the gift is free, God does not just give it to anyone who claims they believe on Jesus; their hearts must be humbled to repentance, like a child. (Mark 10:15) There are a huge number of false preachers out there who claim repentance is works, but the Bible says clearly that God gives men repentance.

(Read "Is Repentance Part of Salvation?" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

> In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure [i.e. perhaps] will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth;
> -2 Timothy 2:25

Based on my analysis and experience with Catholics, I would say most Catholics have been taught repentance, and it is ingrained in them, but the problem is that they repent to a priest in a confession booth instead of going to God. This is what the Bible calls "the sorrow of the world," meaning that they bring their repentance to a person or organization, rather than to God directly, and the Bible tells us that will lead to death.
For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.
-2 Corinthians 7:10

For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.
-Romans 6:23

The Bible clearly tells us that the wages of sin is death, or in other words, death is the reward of the works of sin. However, the Catholic Church has been working very hard to convince people that the wages of sin is works, and that suffering for an extended period of time in purgatory is the price of sin.

The Bible teaches us that Christians do sin, though we work to be perfect and to sanctify ourselves (i.e. set ourselves apart) from sin to the best of our ability, that we may honor and glorify the Lord Jesus Christ, showing a heart of repentance and faith. (Luke 3:8) The Bible also teaches us that good works are rewarded in heaven (1Co 3:8), but good works are NOT the foundation of saving grace through Christ. I repeat, good works will NOT justify men in the eyes of God. Grace is something that is given which is not earned or deserved, but a gift of mercy. The works of a Christian are a result of Christ's saving grace and mercy upon us, as a tree bearing fruit in its time (Mark 4:8); however, works are NOT a foundation of saving grace.

(Read “Do Christians Sin?” here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?
-Matthew 7:16

This is where the Catholic Church starts getting very confusing. On the one hand, they will also state that salvation (i.e. what they call "Justification," or being justified by God) comes through His grace, but then they turn around and say that eternal life is "merited" (i.e. earned/deserved) through good works:

"We must believe that nothing further is wanting to the justified, to prevent their being accounted to have, by those very works which have been done in God, fully satisfied the divine law according to the state of this life, and to have truly merited eternal life, to be obtained also in its (due) time, if so be, however, that they depart in grace,"

-Council of Trent, "On the Fruit of Justification, that is, On the Merit of Good Works, and On the Nature of that Merit," Session VI, Chapter XVI.

The Council of Trent just clearly stated that justification (i.e. salvation) is merited (i.e. earned) by works. Sadly, many people are not familiar with the type of complex words and sentence structures the Catholic Church uses, and therefore, believing it sounds good and fair, simple people are often deceived.

For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.
-Romans 16:18

By "serving their own belly," the Bible means they teach false doctrines because they know it will make them money so they can feed themselves. For most Catholic priests, it's about gaining money and respect, and they know they'll get it because Catholics (and the world in general) are strictly trained to reverence them, which is why almost no Catholic will listen to me; they'll go to a priest instead and believe him because he has a fancy title, degree, and position. (i.e. It's called respecting persons.)

(Read "Respecting Persons Is Sin" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)
For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.
-1 Timothy 6:10

But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.
-James 2:9

The Bible makes it very clear that justification/salvation cannot be earned through the good works of the law:

*Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.*
-Romans 3:20

For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:
-Romans 3:23-24

We can only be justified by the grace of God, we cannot be justified by our works. Christ bears our sin, and grants us HIS righteousness; therefore, we do not merit our salvation through deeds (works) of the law:

*Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.*
-Romans 3:28

But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.
-Romans 4:5

The Catholic Church wants you to believe that you can work off your own debt and earn Christ's salvation. They do teach that works alone without the grace of Christ is insufficient for salvation, but they believe that the equation looks like this:

**CATHOLIC DOCTRINE: GRACE + FAITH + WORKS = SALVATION**

However, because works and grace contradict each other in the context of salvation, this means, ultimately, the Catholic Church removes the grace of Christ, and replaces it with the impossible task of working off eternal punishment, while still deceptively labeling it "grace."

*Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.*
-Romans 4:4

It is faith alone that justifies us through Jesus Christ. The wages of sin is death, but how can one pay for death without death? How can one pay for his eternal punishment without suffering eternal punishment? Therefore those who die believing in the works they've done will be thrown into hell and the lake of fire.

Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.
-Galatians 2:16

The only way to escape hell and the wrath of God is by trusting in the Lord Jesus Christ as the full, one-time payment for sin. If Catholics want to work off their own sin debt, the only way to do it is by suffering eternal punishment in hell, and that's exactly where most Catholics will end up, with their hopes in the false doctrine of purgatory that doesn't exist.

*For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.*
-Romans 10:4
But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law.

-Romans 9:31-32

And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

-Philippians 3:9

Vatican II states:
"In fact the apostles themselves urged their disciples to pray that sinners might be saved. This very ancient practice of the Church has happily lasted, particularly in the practice of penitents [i.e. sinners confessing to a Catholic priest] begging the whole community's prayers, and in helping the dead with intercessions, especially through the offering of the Eucharistic Sacrifice. From the most ancient times in the Church good works were also offered to God for the salvation of sinners, particularly works which human weakness finds hard. Because the sufferings of the martyrs for the faith and for God’s law were thought to be very valuable, penitents used to turn to the martyrs to be helped by their merits to obtain a more speedy reconciliation from the bishops. Indeed, the prayers and good works of holy people were regarded as of such great value that it could be asserted that the penitent was washed, cleansed and redeemed with the help of the entire Christian people."


Indeed, the Bible does teach us to teach and pray for the sake of lost sinners to be saved, but there is NO place in Scripture that teaches us to pray for the dead, as we covered in Chapter 2. The "very ancient" practice is only very ancient to pagans, not to the church of Christ. Vatican II then confirms once again what we've seen all along, that the way "sinners might be saved" is through confession to priests (instead of Christ) and the abomination of the Eucharistic Mass via the cup of devils.

Thus, we can clearly see that the Catholic Church requires works to be saved, on your own merits instead of on the Lord Jesus Christ, because you have to do a lot of praying, for those alive and dead, calling upon priests (not God) in the Catholic Church, and doing the rituals of the Eucharist and Mass in order to gain salvation. This is heresy; we Christians do not call the Catholic Church antichrist because it's just some shocking word to use, but rather, we say it is antichrist because it is against all that Christ taught us. The Pope and his bishops state clearly that they believe it is through the merits of other Catholics within the Church of Rome, not the Lord Jesus Christ, that one obtains the merits of justification/salvation, which means in a nutshell, the Catholic Church attempts to put a patent, or trademark, on salvation.

Though we just read in Romans 3 that a man cannot become justified by good works, and that justification comes through faith in Christ alone, the Catholic Church condemns to hell all those who would believe what the Bible says:
"If any one saith, that the good works of one that is justified are in such manner the gifts of God, as that they are not also the good merits of him that is justified; or, that the said justified, by the good works which he performs through the grace of God and the merit of Jesus Christ, whose living member he is, does not truly merit increase of grace, eternal life, and the attainment of that eternal life, if so be, however, that he depart in grace, and also an increase of glory; let him be anathema."


Once again, the Catholic Church clearly states that you must perform good works to merit grace and eternal life, which is an oxymoron. They condemn to hell anyone who refuses to believe in their blatant contradiction. Let's look at another statement from the same Council of Trent session:
"If any one saith, that justifying [saving] faith is nothing else but confidence [faith] in the divine mercy which remits [pardons] sins for Christ's sake; or, that this confidence [faith] alone is that whereby we are justified [saved]; let him be anathema."

The Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ, which saves the souls of lost sinners, is condemned to hell in the Catholic Church. Once more time, let's read from Galatians 2, to emphasize the contradiction:

Knowing that a man is not justified [saved] by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified [saved] by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified [saved].

-Galatians 2:16

The good works we do as born again Christians are a result of the saving grace of Christ, but here is another example where the Catholic Church teaches the opposite:

"If any one saith, that the justice received is not preserved and also increased before God through good works; but that the said works are merely the fruits and signs of Justification obtained, but not a cause of the increase thereof; let him be anathema."


The Catholic Church just stated that their parishioners must believe that their good works "cause" an increase of justification for saving grace. If you are a Catholic, you need to acknowledge this is what your religion teaches and believes, and in a later chapter, we will read more direct quotes from the Catholic Church in which they say they do not follow Scripture, but rather, they follow tradition, and that is one of the key reasons for their error; they follow the traditions and commandments of men instead of the Christian God of the Bible.

Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy [way of thinking] and vain deceit[worthless lies], after the tradition of men, after the rudiments [first teachings] of the world, and not after Christ.

-Colossians 2:8

Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

-Mark 7:7
In Chapter 1, we went over Catholicism's origin, which was founded in paganism, and thus, it should be no surprise to find many links to pagan practice and doctrine in their religion. One of the most well-known examples of paganism in the Catholic Church is their worship of a goddess they call "Mary," and though Catholics will claim this was the Mary of the Bible, who was the virgin that gave birth to Christ, they claim that only because it's what Catholics are taught to believe, and as we'll see, it is far from the truth.

If you go to the Catholic Church and ask them for a copy of the Ten Commandments to take home with you, they may give you a card that looks something like this:

(The fine print at the bottom says it is taken from the NAB, which stands for the New American Bible, and is also known as the NASB, New American Standard Bible. This is a corrupt new-age version Catholics commonly use.)

The card says that they took these ten commandments from Exodus 20:2-17. **QUESTION: Can you find the following verse on this Catholic card?**

*Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth:*

*Exodus 20:4*

If you searched, you'll notice that this commandment is nowhere to be found. The reason you won't find this verse is because it was removed from the Catholic Ten Commandments because they claim it wasn't part of the original Ten Commandments.

The Jews have always had the commandment about "no graven images" within the second commandment of the Ten quoted from Exodus 20:4, and this is what they still teach their children to this day. That leads us to an obvious question: Why does the Catholic Church remove it entirely?


In order to remove the 2nd commandment and still have ten, the Catholic Church had to do some sleight-of-hand. They took out the 2nd commandment, shifted the 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, and 9th commandments up one slot, then split the 10th commandment into two parts to make up the 9th and 10th commandments.
And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

-Revelation 22:19

The Catholic Church’s excuse is that Exodus 20:4 is part of the first commandment, and so they remove the part about graven images (i.e. idolatry); however, that's not the real reason, it’s just a reason that they give to appease Catholic questions. Granted, the Jews have it all as one commandment as well, but it is still part of the second commandment. The real reason the Catholic Church moved the graven images part out is because the Catholic Church is OVERFLOWING with graven images, and often of pagan gods and idols.

Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

-1 John 5:21

Don't misunderstand; I'm not saying that the Vatican ignored the commandment about graven images, they simply swept it under the rug. It’s very interesting that, on the Vatican’s official website, they have a table with columns showing Exodus 20 (from their corrupt new-age version), compared with Deuteronomy 5 (another instance of the Ten Commandments), and then compare those with the "Traditional Catechetical Formula," which is the Catholic version of the Ten Commandments, but there is a huge gap they leave between what the Jews call the first and second commandments.

(See Catechism of the Catholic Church, "Section Two: The Ten Commandments," Vatican Archives, retrieved Sept 5, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/command.htm])

Notice that the Vatican uses the phrase "strange gods" in place of the phrase "no other gods," because this is far more significant than most people realize. To put a finer point on this, let's suppose you were in a restroom with stalls, and there was a sign on the door that said "use no other toilet except this one," you would clearly heed the warning that this specific toilet was the only toilet that was to be used; however, if you read a sign that said, "use no strange toilets," then it would be up to your discretion to determine what was "strange."

strange (adj): foreign, belonging to another country; not domestic
(See 'strange', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Sept 5, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])
Remember that we have already established that the Catholic Church was born out of the Roman Empire, with a Roman Emperor as their first pope, and that Rome had amassed many pagan religions from around the world. Thus, what might be "strange" to the Jews, was not what was "strange" to Rome because various pagan religions were commonly known to Rome, they made a home in Rome, and the people of Rome were familiar with them. This clause would mean that the Catholic Church is free to worship whatever gods they like as long as they are familiar with them.

It should be pointed out to those of us born again in Christ that even the cross symbols you see on church buildings, jewelry, and clothing are idolatry. The Bible tells us that we ought not to think that any such symbols represent the Godhead (i.e. Father, Son, and Holy Spirit), or anything like unto them because to do so is to adopt the ways of the heathen (i.e. pagans and witches).

(Read "Christian Symbols Are Not Christian" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device.

-Acts 17:29

It is very easy to see the idolatry of graven images in the Catholic Church (and even in most "protestant" church buildings today, due to their use of so-called "Christian" symbols), and of course, the Catholic Church had to come up with some response to this, since Catholic churchgoers were left without a response to born again Christians showing them the truth. How do they answer the accusation of idolatry? Catholic Answers tells them the following:

"Catholics worship statues! People still make this ridiculous claim. Because Catholics have statues in their churches, goes the accusation, they are violating God's commandment: 'You shall not make for yourself a graven image... you shall not bow down to them or serve them' (Ex. 20:4-5);"


So far, the answer is just to call it "ridiculous," which doesn't answer anything; however, before we go further, this anonymous author has already made a false claim. The accusation I'm making is NOT "Catholics are idolaters because they have statues," because I also believe that is a ridiculous claim. I do NOT argue that everyone who visits an art museum is an idolater. (They could be, but not in that context.) The accusation I'm making is, "Catholics are idolaters because they have graven images which they claim represent the Godhead, and they use them for religious worship." Catholic Answers Magazine knows full-well that they cannot respond to the argument I'm making because the evidence is too overwhelming, so instead, they create what's known as a "Strawman Argument."

A Strawman Argument is a logical fallacy; just as a man made of straw, like a scarecrow for example, is less sturdy than an actual man, so too is a strawman argument less sturdy than the actual argument being made. It's easier to fight a strawman than a real man, and likewise, it's easier to answer a strawman argument than the actual argument.

Formally, a strawman argument looks like this:
- Person 1 makes claim X.
- Person 2 restates claim X in a distorted way and attacks it.
- Therefore, claim X is false.
That's too confusing, so let's simplify it:

- **BOB:** "Cindy, your food is too spicy."
- **CINDY:** "Hey everyone, Bob hates spicy food, so he doesn't like what I cooked."

Bob never claimed that he didn't like spicy food; rather, Cindy distorted his argument by claiming something else he did not say. Likewise, Catholic Answers distorts the Christian argument by claiming it's about "having statues," rather than violating the commandments of God.

If you were to go on to read the Catholic Answers article, their argument is that God had commanded the children of Israel to make statues in certain circumstances, so therefore, they claim is that their graven images are acceptable. For example, in Numbers 21:

> Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against the LORD, and against thee: pray unto the LORD, that he take away the serpents from us. And Moses prayed for the people. And the LORD said unto Moses, Make thee a fiery serpent, and set it upon a pole: and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he looketh upon it, shall live. And Moses made a serpent of brass, and put it upon a pole, and it came to pass, that if a serpent had bitten any man, when he beheld the serpent of brass, he lived.

-Numbers 21:7-9

Let's read the argument that I made one more time: "**Catholics are idolaters because they have graven images, which they claim represent the Godhead, and they use them for religious worship.**" Based on this statement, I have three points to make.

**1.** God commanded the Jews to make a statue of a serpent, and thus, there is no violation of the commandments of God when the people are following His direct commandments. This should be absurdly obvious to anyone who follows Christ, but it's difficult to get Catholics to understand such things when they're so busy looking for excuses to justify their sin.

In addition, not only were such statues not used for religious worship among the Jews, but again, God told them to do these specific things at this specific time for a specific reason. Christians were NEVER instructed by God to create statues for religious purposes, and I would challenge Catholics to find me anywhere in the New Testament where that was practiced.

**2.** If Moses and the Hebrew population bowed down to this serpent statue in prayer, as you see the Catholics doing in the above images I provided, then God would have severely punished them, as he did at Mount Sinai when three thousand of them were found to be worshiping a calf made of gold:

> And the children of Levi did according to the word of Moses: and there fell of the people that day about three thousand men.

-Exodus 32:28

In verse 27, the Lord God commanded this to happen, and that means He hates the use of idols. If what the Catholic Church is doing with their graven images, paintings, and other so-called "holy" symbols is not idolatry, then **NOTHING** can be considered idolatry.

**3.** Catholic Answers does not claim their argument to be Biblical. If you read their article, they claim their argument is "common sense:

"Common sense tells us that, since God has revealed himself in various images, most especially in the incarnate Jesus Christ, it's not wrong for us to use images of these forms to deepen our knowledge and love of God."

Notice they did NOT say, "God tells us that it's not wrong" — they said "Common sense tells us that it's not wrong." This means they are not basing their argument on the Word of God; the Catholic Church is basing their argument on the foundation of their own thoughts, how they want to see things through their own eyes.

Be not wise in thine own eyes; fear the LORD, and depart from evil.
-Proverbs 3:7

There is a generation that are pure in their own eyes, and yet is not washed from their filthiness.
-Proverbs 30:12

Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!
-Isaiah 5:21

It's also important to note that Catholic Answers said that their idols "deepen their knowledge" of God. Those statues and paintings are blind, deaf, and ignorant; they do not pass knowledge to anyone, and the Bible very clearly tells us that those who look to them in worship are like unto them, meaning they too are blind, deaf, and ignorant:

Their idols are silver and gold, the work of men's hands. They have mouths, but they speak not: eyes have they, but they see not: They have ears, but they hear not: noses have they, but they smell not: They have hands, but they handle not: feet have they, but they walk not: neither speak they through their throat. They that make them are like unto them; so is every one that trusteth in them.
-Psalm 115:4-8

Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.
-1 Corinthians 12:2

Though we have outward physical evidence of the idolatry in the Catholic Church, even if we didn't see their idols, they would still be guilty of idolatry in their hearts. Just as Jesus pointed out that looking and lusting after a woman means a man committed adultery in his heart, even though he did not physically do the deed, likewise, many churchgoers in this world are guilty of idolatry, even though they've never owned, used, or carved a graven image. (Read "The Biblical Understanding of Idolatry here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Son of man, these men have set up their idols in their heart, and put the stumblingblock of their iniquity before their face: should I be enquired of at all by them?
-Ezekiel 14:3

Catholic Answers concludes by saying:
"The Church absolutely recognizes and condemns the sin of idolatry. What anti-Catholics [i.e. born again Christians] fail to recognize is the distinction between thinking a piece of stone or plaster is a god and desiring to visually remember Christ and the saints in heaven by making statues in their honor."

That is a bold-faced lie. The Catholic Church does not recognize idolatry as any grievous sin because if they did, they would have condemn themselves in anathema; however, conveniently, this is one of the very few doctrines which, as far as I'm aware, the Catholic Church does NOT have anathemized condemnations, which is no surprise at this point. The Catholic Catechism states:

"The Christian [i.e. Catholic] veneration of images is not contrary to the first commandment which proscribes idols. Indeed, 'the honor rendered to an image passes to its prototype [the original from which the image was copied],' and 'whoever venerates [greatly respects] an image venerates the person portrayed in it.' The honor paid to sacred images is a 'respectful veneration, not the adoration due to God alone: Religious worship is not directed to images in themselves, considered as mere things, but under their distinctive aspect as images leading us on to God incarnate."
-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "IV. You Shall Not Make For Yourself A Graven Image," Part 3, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 1, Canon #2132, retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p3s2c1a1.htm]

First of all, it's interesting that pagans believe the exact same thing the Catholic Church believes on this matter; namely that they don't directly worship images. Again, this should be no surprise since we've already learned that the origin of the Catholic Church is pagan worship. Lia Rees, a practicing pagan who was formerly Catholic, says the same thing when asked if pagans worship statues:
"As one of the few modern followers of the ancient Roman Religion, and educated in the fields of archaeology and theology, I can safely say you're on the right track with this. [i.e. She's referring to the question asked.] No pagan religion ever believed the statues, fetishes, or images were the gods themselves. Much like Catholic ikonography [study of symbols and their meanings], they were reminders and representations of the gods. Also like the ikons [representation of a sacred person], they were made to glorify and praise the god in whose image they were made."

Many pagans and witches don't think they are guilty of idolatry because of this excuse that it's only worship of the representation of an idol. So what makes Catholics different than pagans and witches? From a Biblical perspective, nothing. It's the same excuse that pagans and witches will sometimes use to justify themselves, and worse still, other witch authors use Catholics as their justification for idolatry:

"Wiccans would certainly have difficulty following all 10 commandments and harmonizing them with their own theological and moral beliefs. However, Christians[i.e. Catholics] have similar problems: most don't worship on Saturday; many have statues of the Virgin Mary and crucifixes. Yet they still consider themselves to be Christian."

What we have here is a witch looking at the Catholic Church, seeing the striking similarities between witchcraft and Catholicism, and concluding that pagan worship is acceptable since Catholics (who falsely call themselves Christians) do it too. Catholics ought to be ashamed of themselves, but they continue to glory in that for which they should be ashamed.

For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.
-Philippians 3:18-19

Of course, what the Catholic Church will do is claim that they only make idols that represent God, but that makes the Catholic Church WORSE, not better, because they take the practices of the heathen, slap a "Jesus" sticker on it, and call it "good."

Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!
-Isaiah 5:20

To borrow a phrase from Catholic Answers, it would be "common sense" to a ten-year-old that the Catholic Church is practicing idolatry because it's as clear as day, but when a child is bombarded with Catholic lies from the day he's born, he becomes so blinded, he can't see the forest because the trees are in the way. So at this point, since the Catholic Church claims they're not guilty of idolatry, I decided to search their Catechism to get a clear definition of what their idolatry means; what is it that distinguishes Catholics from witches?

The Catholic Catechism states:
"Idolatry not only refers to false pagan worship. It remains a constant temptation to faith. Idolatry consists in divinizing what is not God."
-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "Idolatry," Part 3, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 1, Canon #2113, retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p3s2c1a1.htm]

I repeat, the Catholic Church states that idolatry is "divinizing what is not God." I will now demonstrate that the Catholic Church is practicing idolatry in violation of their own definition.

worship (v): to adore, to pay divine honors with reverence and veneration
(See 'worship', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Mar 30, 2018,[webstersdictionary1828.com])

To "venerate" an image, which is what the Catholic Church claims they are doing, is to "worship" an image. That's the definition of worship, and Catholics all over the world do it on a regular basis.
The above image shows Catholics kneeling to worship at the feet of a statue of a figure they call "Mary," giving her divine honors. The Catholic Church will tell you that this is Mary, the virgin who gave birth to Jesus Christ. Because they are giving to Mary that which is reserved for the Lord God alone, that means they are idolaters because they are "divinizing what is not God."

Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

-Matthew 4:10

divinize (v): to make divine

divine (adj): of or relating to a god, godlike characteristic of or befitting a deity


Let's first look at some details about the Catholic "Mary," how she is worshiped and venerated as a goddess, and then we'll show you that she is NOT the Mary, mother of Jesus, talked about in Scripture; she is actually a pagan goddess that is given the name "Mary." Though countless people have prayed unto Mary, the Lord God told us in Psalm 115:4-8 (quoted above) that she has never heard a single prayer from anyone, nor has she spoken to anyone, but Catholics continue to kneel unto the idol nonetheless.

After the sudden death of his mother, an eight-year-old boy named Carol Voitila developed an intense devotion to the Catholic Mary. Later in his life, Voitila would become Pope John Paul II (1978), and he formally rededicated himself and his Roman office, not to the Lord Jesus Christ or to the Word of God, but rather, to Mary. During his tenure as Pope, Voitila often traveled around the world to various "Marian" shrines to worship her statue, and he was followed by millions of other Catholics.
Voitila often used the phrase “Totus tuus ego sum, Maria,” which translates, "I am totally yours, Mary.” He did not belong to the Lord Jesus Christ; Voitila instead said he belonged to Mary. That’s why Voitila’s funeral casket had a large letter ‘M’ burned into the wood; the ‘M’ stands for "Mary.”

Carol Voitila wrote in his last will and testament, which is in the Vatican archives, and it says:

"I do not know when the moment [of my death] will come, but like everything else, I place it too in the hands of the Mother of my Master: Totus Tuus. In the same maternal Hands I leave everything and everyone with whom my life and vocation have linked me. In these Hands I leave, above all, the Church, as well as my Nation and all humanity."


Again, Voitila did not put his faith in Christ, but rather, he put his faith in Mary. Because he left his soul in the hands of Mary, he never saw the Kingdom of Heaven, but despite the fact that he died with his hopes in false doctrines, Catholics still highly revere this pagan man.

Voitila continued to say that when he went to judgment (not purgatory?), he was putting all his faith and hope in Mary:

"Today, I would like to add just this: that everyone keep the prospect of death in mind and be ready to go before the Lord and Judge - and at the same time Redeemer and Father. So I keep this continuously in my mind, entrusting that decisive moment to the Mother of Christ and of the Church - to the Mother of my hope."


The Bible very simply tells us there is one mediator between God and men, and that is the Lord Jesus Christ. If we are to be reconciled to God, the ONLY way to do so is through Christ.

mediator (n): one that interposes between parties at variance for the purpose of reconciling them
(See 'mediator', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Mar 30, 2018,[webstersdictionary1828.com])

For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.

-1 Timothy 2:3-6

For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

-1 Corinthians 3:11
Carol Voitila did not believe the Word of God on this matter. He decided that Christ was not sufficient, so he put his faith in Mary and ended up in hell, and some Catholics I’ve talked to find this completely offensive that I would dare say Pope John Paul II ended up in hell, but the fact is that he directly taught that Mary is the way that leads to Christ: 
"The history of Christian piety teaches that Mary is the way which leads to Christ and that filial devotion to her takes nothing from intimacy with Jesus; indeed, it increases it and leads to the highest levels of perfection."

-Pope John Paul II, Devotion to Mary is Based on Jesus' Will, EWTN (Global Catholic Network), retrieve Mar 30, 2018, [ewtn.com/library/papaldoc/jp2bvm50.htm]; See also Bill McCarthy & James Tibbets, Mary in the Church Today: Official Catholic Teaching on the Mother of God Since Vatican II, St Andrews Productions, 2000, p. 374, ISBN: 9781891903229

The Bible says there is ONE mediator, but the Catholic Church teaches there is more than one mediator. In fact, what really happens in the Catholic Church is that you have to go to a Catholic priest to have him act as a mediator, and then you have to go to Mary, and then she goes to Christ, and then Christ goes to God, but those extra mediators are not found in Scripture.

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

- John 14:6

Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

-Matthew 11:28

These verses were not spoken by Mary; Mary did not say she would give men rest. There is ONE mediator, the Lord Jesus Christ, and He said that all who come to Him will find rest; salvation is not found by going to Catholic priests and worshiping statues of Mary.

John Paul II's Book of Mary is a collection of John Paul II's writings on Mary, which is approved for use by the Catholic Church. In the book, the chapters are titled by the names of worship given by the Catholic Church to Mary; some of those include the following (and I will highlight a few that readers will want to note):

- Gate of Heaven (p. 13)
- Mary Immaculate (p. 33)
- Mediatrix of All Graces (p. 46)
- Mirror of Perfection (p. 60)
- Mother of the Church (p. 73)
- Mother of Mercy (p. 92)
- Pillar of Faith (p. 142)
- Queen of All Saints (p. 159)
- Seat of Wisdom (p. 175)

(See Margaret R. Bunson, John Paul II's Book of Mary, Our Sunday Visitor, 2005, Table of Contents, ISBN: 9781592761845)

Giving Mary these titles is the very definition of worship, even according to the Catholic Church's own definition, which is "divinizing what is not God." When Catholics refer to Mary as the "Mediatrix of All Graces," they are replacing the Lord Jesus Christ by substituting Mary in His place, claiming that she is the mediator between God and men; or in other words, they believe you cannot get grace unless you go through Mary.

This is also why they call her the "Gate of Heaven" because they believe Mary is the way which leads to eternal life and the Kingdom of God. Voitila helps us understand the wickedness and idolatry of the Catholic Church:

"Mary shares our human condition but in complete openness to the grace of God. Not having known sin, she is able to have compassion on every kind of weakness. She understands sinful man and loves him with a mother's love."


This is one of the reasons I highlighted the title "Mary Immaculate" and "Mirror of Perfection" because the word 'immaculate' means "pure," or in this context, it means "without sin."

immaculate (adj): free from spot or stain; free from moral blemish; pure; free from fault, flaw, or error
Carol Voitila repeats this worshipful title in his last will and testament: "I would like once again to entrust myself entirely to the Lord's grace. He Himself will decide when and how I am to end my earthly life and my pastoral ministry. In life and in death I am Totus Tuus [totally yours] through Mary Immaculate."


Voitila spoke of Jesus Christ and grace through Him, but he believed that grace was only granted by and through Mary in her so-called "sinless perfection." If Mary was without sin, then she did not need a savior, and yet, she called God her savior:

\[
\text{And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Savior.} \\
\text{-Luke 1:46-47}
\]

The Catholic Church is very sly in how they present their doctrine, deceiving many people in a snake-oil salesman fashion. We can see this by once again turning to Tim Staples at Catholic Answers, in an article in which he salutes and reverences the Catholic Mary:

"Not a few Protestants are surprised to discover the Catholic Church actually agrees that Mary was 'saved.' Indeed, Mary needed a savior!"


Most people would read this and think, "Wow, we must misunderstand Catholicism because they actually agree with us when they say Mary needed a savior." Don't be deceived; keep reading:

"However, Mary was 'saved' from sin in a most sublime [supreme] manner. She was given the grace to be 'saved' completely from sin so that she never committed even the slightest transgression."


You can see how Staples says on the one hand that Mary needed a savior, but then puts the word "saved" in quotations because he knows he's defining "saved" as something other than how the Bible defines it. He's a liar, and a deceiver, because he's of his father, the Devil, and because he learned well these techniques from his Roman bishop teachers. Staples is attempting to deceive people by trying to make them think we all believe the same thing, when he knows that's not true, otherwise, he wouldn't have had to put that word in quotation. Staples defines 'saved' as "never committing sin," but without sin, there is nothing to be saved from, and the Bible tells us that those who would claim to be without sin are liars:

\[
\text{If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.} \\
\text{-1 John 1:9-10}
\]

Thus, even IF Mary claimed to have no sin (which she didn't), the Bible said she would be a liar. However, the only liars in this situation are Tim Staples of Catholic Answers, and the Catholic priests and bishops at large, who put their trust in the so-called "Queen of Heaven."

The "Queen of Heaven" is an interesting title because that's the exact same description that witches give to their goddess: "INANNA: A Sumerian goddess who presided over fertility, love, and war. Known as 'Queen of Heaven'... Offerings were traditionally made to her at sunrise. After the sun sank beneath the horizon and darkness veiled the night sky, she transformed into the patroness of the temple prostitutes. She is identified with the Babylonian goddess Ishtar."


Since Catholics often ignore the Word of God in favor of tradition, they might be surprised to learn that God described the abominations of the Jews when they worshiped the "Queen of Heaven." They provoked the anger of God, and He cursed them for their wickedness:
The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger.

- Jeremiah 7:18

But since we left off to burn incense to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, we have wanted all things, and have been consumed by the sword and by the famine. And when we burned incense to the queen of heaven, and poured out drink offerings unto her, did we make her cakes to worship her, and pour out drink offerings unto her, without our men? Then Jeremiah said unto all the people, to the men, and to the women, and to all the people which had given him that answer, saying, The incense that ye burned in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, ye, and your fathers, your kings, and your princes, and the people of the land, did not the LORD remember them, and came it not into his mind? So that the LORD could no longer bear, because of the evil of your doings, and because of the abominations which ye have committed; therefore is your land a desolation, and an astonishment, and a curse, without an inhabitant, as at this day.

- Jeremiah 44:18-22

Pope Francis I (i.e. Jorge [hor-hey] Bergoglio), for example, does exactly what was described in Jeremiah; namely, he burns incense to the "Queen of Heaven." The Bible clearly stated this is an evil doing that is an abomination in the sight of God, but Catholics continue the practice because they follow tradition instead of the Word of God.

The correlation and similarities between the Catholic Mary and the goddess of pagans and witches is very eye-opening if you take the time to compare them. Witches in covens and druids in pagan circles understand very well the symbolism the Catholic Church uses, but most Catholics don't have a clue what they mean; most Catholics think it's just a bunch of artwork, and sit in blissful, willful ignorance about where it all came from.

The Catholic Church will claim these are simply depictions of Revelation 12:
And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars:

- Revelation 12:1

The Catholics claim this is Mary, but that is not true. Revelation 12:1 is a metaphorical reference to the Christian Church in the final days; it has nothing to do with Mary. The following pagan author writes about the significance of the moon under the feet:

"Many mythological traditions identify the moon as a feminine counterpart to the masculine sun. For this reason, a number of Goddesses are associated with the moon, including Artemis or Diana, Selena, and of course, Luna. Even the 'Goddess' of Christianity, the Virgin Mary, has some associations with the moon under her feet... So, for Witches, the moon is special because it is a powerful symbol of the Goddess, and therefore of women."


What Christians need to understand is that Catholics may claim that these depictions are based on "Mary" in Revelation 12, but in reality, this practice was adopted from the pagans. When the Council of Nicaea formed in Rome (325 A.D.), it's duty was to make sure that it agreed with and fused with pagan tradition because Christian doctrine rebukes and condemns pagan tradition, which is why, at one point, Rome hunted and killed Christians. It was imperative that all Christian doctrine was reshaped to coincide with the pagan religions of Rome, so they could continue to maintain power. The fusion with pagan doctrine is what satisfied the itching ears of the sinful public, which is why the newly formed Catholic Church was accepted so readily.

The following author documents the long history of "moon goddess" worship over thousands of years, starting with Babylon, spreading into Judaism, and later into Roman Catholicism:

"The cult of the Virgin Mary is a phenomenon in Catholic communities throughout the world... the historical development of the concept of a Moon-Mother Goddess, her beginnings in the Near East five thousand years ago—circa 3,000 BCE, and her ultimate absorption into the Catholic Church as the Blessed Virgin Mary... The examination of the literature related to Goddesses, specifically Moon Goddesses demonstrates that the role of Mary, the mother of Jesus was inherited from the Goddess Isis in ancient Egypt and the Goddess Ishtar in Babylon."


I have had a few witches write me over the years, and they have all told me two things in common: 1) They said I was (to their surprise) correct concerning the doctrine of the pagans in relation to the traditions of church buildings and various religions, and 2) they hated and despised me for exposing their pagan traditions as wickedness and idolatry that would lead them to the wide gates of hell. Sadly, Catholics I've spoken with tend to be less familiar with their religious beliefs than pagans, and so when I tell them what their cult teaches, they tend to not believe me, just as most of the Jews would not hear Christ, even when He spoke to those who believed on him (John 8:31):

*Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.*

- John 8:45

Getting back to the moon under the feet of the woman portrayed in the Catholic images, why a crescent moon? It's simple: That's pagan tradition. Witches are quite familiar with this:
"The 'Crescent Moon Goddess' is an ancient symbol of change in a woman's life, and her life cycles as they parallel the season of the earth. Historically, the goddess is the symbol of feminine energy and nature's power. With her flowing tresses, she represents a classic image of beauty... This image spans many centuries and appears across many cultures. The design of the crescent moon, which represents the moon when it is located 45 to 90 degrees ahead of the sun, evokes a certain mystical feeling. Not surprisingly, the Crescent Moon has been adopted as a symbol by various religions of the world, including Islam and the Wiccan belief system."


Indeed, the crescent moon symbol is no coincidence. The Islamic god they call "Allah" is, in fact, a moon god, which is why that symbol is used so frequently by Muslims. (Read "Islam: Religion of Terror" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

In short, the crescent moon symbol used in Catholic paintings is the "maidens" symbol in Wicca, part of the "Triple Moon," which represents the three aspects of their goddess. (i.e. maiden, mother, and crone) The maiden crescent moon is used to represent the "virgin" aspect:

"Triple Moon - Many Wiccans consider the triple moon 'the' definitive symbol of the Goddess. The triple moon consists of a left-facing crescent moon on the left, a full moon in the center, and a right-facing (like a 'C') crescent moon on the right. All three of these are put together in a row to make the triple moon )O(. It represents the three aspects of maiden, mother and crone."


As we can see, pagans believe the "maidens" crescent moon symbol to be the ultimate way to define their goddess overall, which is why it is used so frequently by correlating pagan religions, like Catholicism and Islam. It's not just the paintings and stained-glass windows; the Catholic Church follows after the pagan false goddess in many areas:

"The major difference between The Goddess and the Blessed Virgin Mary is that The Goddess is a Creatrix in Her Own Right and a source of Divine Power. In Catholicism, Mary is Blessed, unique among women, sinless, The Mother of God - and it is believed that She ascended bodily into Heaven. However, for Catholics, She is supposed to be merely a channel of Power from God, and not a source of Divine Power. Herself. Of course, this is only the official view of the Catholic Church. Many worshipers understand, and have always understood instinctively, if not consciously, that the Blessed Virgin is a modern version of The Goddess; and many Catholic cathedrals are actually built upon the sites of ancient temples to The Great Goddess. For example, St. Peters Cathedral in the Vatican is built right on top of the old temple of The Goddess, Magna Mater, and some parts of the original temple are presumably still left under the foundations."

In Chapter 1, we saw a picture of the Pantheon, which was dedicated by pagans and witches to six gods and six goddesses. That's a total of 12 gods and goddesses, which is why the Catholic Mary has 12 stars above her head; meaning that it has nothing to do with the metaphorical woman described in Revelation. The Catholic Church did not condemn the pagan site used in idolatrous worship, but instead, they claimed ownership of the temple, cleaned and fixed the place up, and renamed it "St. Mary and the Martyrs," continuing the worship of the pagan goddess on their own terms.


Pope John Paul II declared that this pagan goddess will lead them to the truth of Christ:
"Precisely with her faith as Spouse and Mother she wishes to act upon all those who entrust themselves to her as her children. And it is well known that the more her children persevere and progress in this attitude, the nearer Mary leads them to the 'unsearchable riches of Christ.'"
-Pope John Paul II, Redemptoris Mater #46; Also quoted in John Paul II's Book of Mary, 1996, front page under the cover, ISBN: 0-87973-578-3

Again, that's not what the Bible teaches us:

```
Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:
```
-Ephesians 3:7-9

There is no mention here of Mary or the pagan goddesses of witchcraft. However, idolatry and witchcraft is mentioned in Galatians, and I believe it is vital that Catholics understand what the Bible says about it:

```
Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulation, strife, sedition, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.
```
-Galatians 5:19-21

Despite the warnings of God in His Word, the Catholic Church strictly instructs that all Catholic parishioners worship their pagan goddess "Mary," with the use of the "marian rosery," and remember this is listed under "obligations" (i.e. duty) in the Catholic Code of Canon Law: "With special veneration, they are to honor the Virgin Mother of God, the example and protector of all consecrated life, also through the marian rosary."

-Vatican Archives, "Chapter VI. The Obligations and Rights of Institutes and Their Members," Code of Canon Law, Cannon #663 §4, retrieved Apr 25, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ENG1104/_P28.HTM]

According to Marians of the Immaculate Conception, a conglomerate of Catholic priests dedicated to Mary, performing the marian rosery requires a set of "rosary beads," and the following:

"On the 5 decades (sets of 10 beads) of a rosary, we pray and meditate on the corresponding set of 5 Mysteries from the Joyful Mysteries, the Sorrowful Mysteries, the Glorious Mysteries, or the Luminous Mysteries.
1. Make the Sign of the Cross and say the 'Apostles Creed.'
2. Say the 'Our Father.'
3. Say three 'Hail Marys.'
4. Say the 'Glory be to the Father.'
5. Announce the First Mystery; then say the 'Our Father.'
6. Say ten 'Hail Marys,' while meditating on the Mystery.
7. Say the 'Glory be to the Father.' After each decade say the following prayer requested by the Blessed Virgin Mary at Fatima: 'O my Jesus, forgive us our sins, save us from the fires of hell, lead all souls to Heaven, especially those in most need of Thy mercy.'
8. Announce the Second Mystery: then say the 'Our Father.' Repeat 6 and 7 and continue with the Third, Fourth, and Fifth Mysteries in the same manner.
9. Say the 'Hail, Holy Queen' on the medal after the five decades are completed. The Mysteries traditionally adhere to certain days of the week. Monday: Joyful, Tuesday: Sorrowful, Wednesday: Glorious, Thursday: Luminous, Friday: Sorrowful, Saturday: Joyful, Sunday: Glorious.”


Without getting into too much detail, the "Our Fathers," "Hail Marys," and all the other things they listed out are a group of phrases that are repeated over and over. You can look them up on your own if you want to, but listing them out here would be a waste of time, and the reason for that is because it is what the Bible calls "vain repetitions," and the Lord Jesus Christ made the matter very easy for us to understand.

In an earlier chapter, we covered how the Catholic Church is devouring widows' houses, and in that same verse, Christ points out that those who make long, drawn-out prayers for pretense (i.e. for show) will end up in hell:

Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows’ houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

-Matthew 23:14

Which devour widows’ houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

-Luke 20:47

It's not just in the Catholic Church either; many religious institutions do this. They put on a show for their prayers, to be seen among men, but Jesus told us we should do these things in secret:

But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

-Matthew 6:8

(Read "The Biblical Understanding of Prayer here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The Lord Jesus Christ has already said that He doesn't hear the vain repetitious prayers. That will certainly make many Catholics angry, because they've been taught that God listens to every prayer no matter what, and so they find it easier to just ignore the warnings I will give them from Scripture, rather than face the truth. Just as the Jews were working wickedness in their pagan traditions and would not come to repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing), the Lord God also told them He would not hear their prayers:

And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide mine eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers, I will not hear: your hands are full of blood. Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil;

-Isaiah 1:15-16

Catholics sing their songs every week, just as the Jews did, but because of their wickedness, God said He would not hear their songs, and Jesus said that they worship Him in vain:

Take thou away from me the noise of thy songs; for I will not hear the melody of thy viols. But let judgment run down as waters, and righteousness as a mighty stream.

-Amos 5:23-24

Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

-Mark 7:7
They worship God in vain because they follow the commandments of the Catholic Church to bow before a pagan goddess, reverencing her as divinity, which violates their own definition of idolatry:

"To foster the sanctification of the people of God, the Church commends to the special and filial reverence of the Christian faithful the Blessed Mary ever Virgin, Mother of God, whom Christ established as the mother of all people, and promotes the true and authentic veneration of the other saints whose example instructs the Christian faithful and whose intercession sustains them."


Notice that it says she is "Mary EVER Virgin," meaning that she is claimed to forever hold the status of "maiden," which is exactly what the witches believe about their goddess. It should be noted that Mary gave birth to other children, which means she didn't remain a virgin her whole life, and thus, the Catholic Church pulled that idea from the pagans, not from Scripture.

Catholics are obsessed with calling Mary blessed for bearing Jesus in the womb and feeding Him from her breast, and so they love to quote Luke 11:27, which says:

*And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.*

-Luke 11:27

But they rarely quote Jesus in the next verse:

*But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.*

-Luke 11:28

If we are to hear the Word of God and keep it, then I say to all Catholics that in order to flee from idolatry, you must flee from the Catholic Church:

*Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.*

-1 Corinthians 10:14

#7 – The Pope: Throne of an Antichrist

The Catholic Dictionary, New Advent, gives us a definition of "The Pope:"

"The title pope, once used with far greater latitude, is at present employed solely to denote the Bishop of Rome, who, in virtue of his position as successor of St. Peter, is the chief pastor of the whole Church, the Vicar of Christ upon earth."


There is no position of "chief pastor" in the church, and any disciple of Christ's doctrine ought to pause in concern over the title "Vicar of Christ." What exactly does that mean? A 'vicar' means a person who is authorized to perform the functions and duties of someone else; or in short, the Catholic Pope is considered by Catholics to be "Christ on earth," or "to have the seat and authority of Christ Himself."

In his 1828 dictionary, Noah Webster put it very simply:

*vicar (n): In a general sense, a person deputed or authorized to perform the functions of another; a substitute in office. The pope pretends to be vicar of Jesus Christ on earth.*

(See 'vicar', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Apr 27, 2018,[webstersdictionary1828.com])
The Bible never mentions such a position as the "Vicar of Christ," but the Bible does tell us there would be false Christs that would arise:

For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

- Matthew 24:24

Namely, these men are called "antichrists," and the Bible also tells us there would be many antichrists before the final antichrist (i.e. the son of perdition):

Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.

- 1 John 2:18

Though the Latin origins of the word 'vicar' means "substitute," when the word is translated into Greek (i.e. vicarious christi), it takes on a whole new meaning:

"But in process of time, by a strange perversion of the original meaning of the word, Vicarius, came to be understood by the adulators of the See of Rome, in the opposite sense of a 'vicegerent' or 'deputy.' And thus, by an ominous fatality, the title Vicar of Christ, most unwittingly, and in disgrace of the boasted infallibility of the Roman Pontiffs, became the exact rendering of the obnoxious term [*Greek spelling*]'Antichrist':"... [The book goes on to break down the Greek composition.]... And thus, by a singular circumstance, Gregory the Great became himself the 'forerunner of Antichrist,' by assuming the inauspicious title of Vicarius Christi, perverted by his successors into the name of blasphemy."

-The Antijacobin Review and Magazine, Vol. 27, Sherwood, Neely, and Jones, Paternoster-Row, 1807, p. 511; See also William Hales & John T. Troy, Letters on the Religious and Political Tenets of the Roman Heirarchy, Oxford University, 1813, p. 45

When we get into more of the dark history behind the popes and the Catholic Church, the "Vicar of Christ" actually being "antichrist" will be more clearly seen. However, before we get to that, let's address the Biblical fallacies of Catholic claims for the authority of their popes.

As New Advent stated in the quote at the beginning of this chapter, Catholics believe that Peter was the first Pope, and that all subsequent popes are his successors. The website continues to say:

"The proof that Christ constituted St. Peter head of His Church is found in the two famous Petrine texts, Matthew 16:17-19, and John 21:15-17."


And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

- Matthew 16:17-19

Now let's demonstrate, once again, that Catholics have no understanding of Biblical doctrine because these verses NEVER make Peter the "Vicar of Christ," nor was any such thing ever taught in the New Testament. Let's begin by looking at the context in the preceding verses:

When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am? And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist: some, Elias [Elijah]; and others, Jeremias [Jeremiah], or one of the prophets. He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?

- Matthew 16:13-15

Jesus is not asking these questions for knowledge because He already knows their hearts and thoughts of men; rather, Jesus is asking them looking for their confession of faith that He is the Son of God. (i.e. Emmanuel, meaning "God with us." So we've now established the context in these verses, namely, faith that Jesus is the Son of God.

And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

- Matthew 16:16
Despite what many other Jews believed, Peter believed that Christ is God, specifically the Son of God, come to earth in the flesh. Again, the context is about **faith that Jesus is the Son of God**.

> And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.  
> -Matthew 16:17

It was not by Peter’s own intellect that he knew Jesus is the Son of God, but God revealed it to Peter because of his humility and faith. Once again, the context in these verses is about **faith that Jesus is the Son of God**.

> And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.  
> -Matthew 16:18

The name 'Peter' means "rock," and because of that, the Catholic Church has hinged their 1700 years of papal hierarchy on the definition of Peter's name. I'm not kidding; that's the primary reason. Notice that Christ did **NOT** say, "upon THEE I will build my church;" He said "upon THIS ROCK I will build my church." The context, as we have seen multiple times already, is **faith that Jesus is the Son of God**, and thus, upon "this rock" (i.e. faith that Jesus is the Son of God) is the foundation (rock) on which Christ will build His church.

The context is very clear, and this simple doctrine can be backed up by numerous verses. Please read the following Scripture and then decide if you believe the Bible teaches that the rock is Peter, or if you believe the Bible teaches that the rock is Christ:

**For who is God, save the LORD? and who is a rock, save our God?**  
-2 Samuel 22:32

**He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation.**  
-Psalms 89:26

**He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.**  
-Deuteronomy 32:4

**But Jeshurun waxed fat, and kicked: thou art waxen fat, thou art grown thick, thou art covered with fatness; then he forsook God which made him, and lightly esteemed the Rock of his salvation.**  
-Deuteronomy 32:15

To show that **the LORD is upright: he is my rock**, and there is no unrighteousness in him.  
-Psalms 92:15

**Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee.**  
-Deuteronomy 32:18

**There is none holy as the LORD: for there is none beside thee: neither is there any rock like our God.**  
-1 Samuel 2:2

**And he said, The LORD is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer;**  
-2 Samuel 22:2
The LORD liveth; and blessed be my rock; and exalted be the God of the rock of my salvation.
-2 Samuel 22:47

The LORD liveth; and blessed be my rock; and let the God of my salvation be exalted.
-Psalm 18:46

Unto thee will I cry, O LORD my rock; be not silent to me: lest, if thou be silent to me, I become like them that go down into the pit.
-Psalm 28:1

Because thou hast forgotten the God of thy salvation, and hast not been mindful of the rock of thy strength, therefore shalt thou plant pleasant plants, and shalt set it with strange slips:
-Isaiah 17:10

For thou art my rock and my fortress; therefore for thy name's sake lead me, and guide me.
-Psalm 31:3

I will say unto God my rock, Why hast thou forgotten me? why go I mourning because of the oppression of the enemy?
-Psalm 42:9

He only is my rock and my salvation: he is my defence; I shall not be moved.
-Psalm 62:6

And they remembered that God was their rock, and the high God their redeemer.
-Psalm 78:35

O come, let us sing unto the LORD: let us make a joyful noise to the rock of our salvation.
-Psalm 95:1

And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem.
-Isaiah 8:14

And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.
-1 Corinthians 10:4

There are many more verses beyond this that could be used to demonstrate the point, but this should be more than sufficient to prove what I am teaching, namely, that it is absurd to think that Peter, a mere man, or the wicked popes of the Catholic Church, could ever be our Rock of Salvation. The Lord Jesus Christ abhors such wicked doctrine, and if Peter were alive, he would also hate such a thing and rebuke it. Jesus Christ has always been mankind's Rock of Salvation, the sole authority and head over the church:
That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

- Ephesians 1:20-23

If Peter is such an important head of the whole church, then why was he not mentioned anywhere here? Did you see anything in those verses about a pope or priest? If Peter was the head of the church of Jesus Christ, then Paul would surely have acknowledged Peter somewhere in these verses, but there is no mention of him. (Nor does Peter ever mention such a role in his letters.)

Jesus continues to explain His doctrine in Matthew 16:

And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

-Matthew 16:19

There are some Christians today who struggle understanding this verse due to corrupt Catholic influence. Catholics interpret this to mean that Peter has ultimate authority to decide who stays and who goes in heaven, which is why so many people have seen the cartoons with Peter standing outside the gates of heaven allowing people entrance or rejecting them, but this is not anywhere close to the doctrine that's being taught in verse 19.

The proper interpretation of this is given two chapters later in Matthew 18:

Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

-Matthew 18:15-18

This is something that is rarely seen today because most pastors in modern-day church buildings are treated (and want to be treated) like the sole ruling authority over the church, like a king or a pope. Most church buildings won't remove anyone because they want more open wallets in their church, but if a church removes a member of the body from the church, it is typically done so by the pastor alone, bypassing the 4-step process Jesus Christ set up for us to use.
When one is accepted into a church congregation, they have been "binded" into the body, but if they are put out of the body, they are "loosed" back into the world. Jesus Christ gave the disciples authority to bind and loose from the church, and whatsoever they bound and loosed, would be also done in heaven, but even though He gave His disciples special authority, He did not leave it to them alone because the entire congregation was to be involved as eye-witnesses, so there was no confusion and the offender was given every opportunity for repentance. (Again, I emphasize that this is almost NEVER done in church buildings today.)

So when Jesus said He would give the keys to the kingdom of heaven to His disciples, what does that mean? It doesn't mean Peter is standing at the gates of heaven with a keyring ready to reject anyone on his 'naughty' list. It means the disciples of Jesus had the special authority to "bind" and "loose" from the church, and the same would be done in heaven based on that authority Christ gave to ALL of them (including the whole church), but nowhere in these verses is it even remotely implied that Peter is the head of all Christendom, and that he must pass off his scepter of rulership to other men down through the ages to be the so-called "Holy" Pope.

But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

-Matthew 20:25-28

Furthermore, if Peter was supposed to be the first "Vicar" over the church, why is he not mentioned in Paul's letter to the Romans? In Romans 16, Paul greets many of those in the Roman church, including other evangelists and apostles, but Peter is never mentioned in that letter. If you wrote a letter to the staff at the White House, but did not mention the President, that would be rather odd. In fact, there is no Scriptural evidence that Peter ever visited the church in Rome, meaning that he may never have stepped foot in Rome, but the Catholic Church puts their faith, hope, and structure of everything they say and do on the basis of a doctrine that has no supporting evidence.

Even though dedicated Catholics want to believe that Peter was the first "Pope" of the Catholic Church is self-evident, even Britannica Encyclopedia admits that there is no evidence (i.e. Catholics claim it is "self-evident" because there is no evidence):

"The identification of this obvious primacy of Peter in the New Testament with the primacy of the church of Rome is not self-evident. For one thing, the New Testament is almost silent about a connection between Peter and Rome. The reference at the close of the Acts of the Apostles to the arrival of the Apostle Paul in Rome gives no indication that Peter was there as the leader of the Christian community or even as a resident, and the epistle that Paul had addressed somewhat earlier to the church at Rome devotes its entire closing chapter to greetings addressed to many believers in the city but fails to mention Peter's name."

The reason for this is because, if you look closely, the Catechism of the Catholic Church openly states that Catholics do not follow the Bible when it comes to such matters:

"As a result the [Catholic] Church, to whom the transmission and interpretation of Revelation is entrusted, 'does not derive her certainty about all revealed truths from the holy Scriptures alone. Both Scripture and Tradition must be accepted and honored with equal sentiments of devotion and reverence.'"

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "The Transmission of Divine Revelation," Part 1, Section 1, Chapter 2, Article 2, Canon #82, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p1s1c2a2.htm]

If you ask a Catholic what Scriptural evidence that they have that Peter was the first Pope, if they will be honest, they must answer that it's not based on Scripture. However, I doubt you will ever meet a Catholic who is knowledgeable enough about their religious institution, and honest enough, to tell you the truth openly. They blindly follow tradition; it's as simple as that.

*Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*

- Mark 7:7

*New Advent* also claimed John 21, concerning the commandment to "feed my sheep," as evidence that Peter was the first Pope:

*So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs. He saith to him again the second time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep. He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.*

- John 21:15-17

As we're about to read, Peter told ALL the elders that they were to feed the sheep; not just himself. He also told them they were NOT to be lords over the flock, as the popes of Rome have done, and he told them that they were NOT to seek after filthy lucre (i.e. money), which priests and popes have done for centuries through the indulgences, as we covered in Chapter 4.

*The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock. And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*

- 1 Peter 5:1-4

Why did Peter not refer to himself as the "Chief Shepherd?" He called Jesus the Chief Shepherd. However, on the basis that Jesus told Peter to feed his sheep, Catholics insist this is enough evidence to create a "Vicar of Christ:"

"He saith to him, 'Feed my sheep'. Why does He pass over the others and speak of the sheep to Peter?... I should reply that He made Peter the teacher not of that see but of the whole world."


What Catholics don't understand is that all Christians were given the authority to teach the whole world. Jesus also said that all power was given unto Him in the earth, not unto a pope:

*And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.*

- Matthew 28:18-20

So why did Christ speak specifically to Peter about feeding sheep? Why did He specifically ask Peter three times? Because Peter denied Him three times, and Christ was showing him mercy three times:
Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended. Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

-Matthew 26:33-34

And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

-Matthew 26:75

There is absolutely no context here for creating a Roman Pontiff (i.e. Pope) that rules over all. Catholics teach false doctrine that the "rock" is Peter instead of Christ, and then they say the Pope is the sole leader over the whole world on the basis of Christ telling Peter three times to "feed my sheep." I realize some people have a hard time believing that's all they've got to present as evidence, and that such a deception could not possibly be that simple, but that's really it; everything else they teach is based on traditions the popes and bishops made up, which is based on their false interpretations of these two passages.

I've spoken personally with Catholics who insist on Peter being the "rock" because Christ called him that. If we approach Scripture the way that Catholics do, then we would have to conclude that Peter is also Satan because right after Christ named Simon "Peter," He called Peter by the name of "Satan:"

But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan; thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

-Matthew 16:23

This shows us that there is an inconsistency in Catholic doctrine; meaning that they won't apply their approach to Scripture to all areas, only those where they think they can get away with teaching a lie. Inconsistency in doctrine is what the Bible calls "double minded," meaning that they flip-flop like a politician whenever it suits them.

A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.

-James 1:8

Notice I Did Not Use The "Pebble" Argument

Most often, in various leavened websites, ministries, and church buildings, they will claim that Peter's name in Greek (petros) just means a "little rock" or "pebble," but he's not the big rock that is Jesus. This is a useless argument that carries no weight with Catholics, and more importantly, it's an argument that employs the Greek scam; a method by which preachers (who mostly don't know any Greek) use a Greek grammar dictionary as evidence, rather than the context of the Word of God.

(Read "The 'Original Greek' Scam" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

-Hebrews 4:12

As we can see, the doctrine in the letters of Peter contradict Catholic teaching, and there no context in their two examples they use to justify a "pope," so the context of Scripture is all we need to demonstrate the truth of the matter because the Word of God is a sufficient weapon against their false doctrines. There is no need to fall into the trap of using the so-called "original Greek," which is the basis of corrupt new-age bible versions, when the Word of God has been perfectly preserved, with words defined by their context, in the King James Bible.

(Read "Why I Use The King James Bible" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The fact is that the "Vicar of Christ" was not invented until 325 A.D. when Constantine and his cohorts created the position to usurp Christ's authority on earth. Despite what Catholics might want to believe, the Roman Pontiff (i.e. Pope) was always believed to be God Himself, and if Catholics would come to repentance, be willing do a little historical research, and stop blindly trusting in priests, they would find the truth.
Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.
- Jeremiah 17:5

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
- Matthew 7:7-8

The following is an ancient Roman Catholic document (Glossary in Extravagantes Johannes) that calls the Pope the "Lord God." Indeed, Catholic doctrine, taught properly, teaches that the Pope is God, and the most dedicated Catholics know this:

"But to believe that our Lord God the Pope, the establisher of said decreet, and of this, could not decree, as he did decree, should be accounted heretical."
- John H. Treat, The Catholic Faith, Or, Doctrines of the Church of Rome Contrary to Scripture and the Teaching of the Primitive Church, Bishop Welles Brotherhood, 1888, p. 536, [Harvard University]

Don't fall for the lie of the typical Catholic priest who will tell you a fanciful tale that their Pope is just a "substitute" for Christ. The Catholic Church believes and teaches their Pope IS God in the flesh, and past popes have declared it in official decrees.

For those Catholics who still may not believe that an anathema from the Catholic Church is a condemnation to hell, perhaps they'll listen to Pope Boniface VIII (8th, 1294-1303):
"Furthermore, we declare, we proclaim, we define that it is absolutely necessary for salvation that every human creature be subject to the Roman Pontiff."
- Pope Boniface VIII, "Unam Sanctam", Papal Encyclicals Online, Nov 18, 1302, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [papalencyclicals.net/Bon08/B8unam.htm]

Such a statement should be no surprise coming from such heretics who believe that the Pope takes the place of Christ on the cross. Zenit, a news agency in Rome, documented a statement from Roman Catholic Bishop Patrick Dunn of Auckland when he commented on Pope John Paul II's condition in the final days of his life:
"It seems that Pope John Paul II now presides over the universal Church from his place upon Christ's cross,' said Bishop Dunn, who traveled with seven other prelates to Rome."
Sadly, there are many Catholics who, through the deception of the ecumenical movement, believe that born again Christians and Catholics believe "mostly the same thing," but the truth is that Catholics serve a different "god" than we do; they serve a different "christ" than we do. The following is a letter that was received by Friar Septimus Andrews from Venetian priest Don Marino, who translated the words of the letter he received from Cardinal Joseph Sarto, January 10, 1896:

"Dear Don Marino—I have read all the homilies I have made since my coming here in Venice, and only in the sermon for the anniversary of the election of the Holy Father, I said these exact words: The Pope represents Jesus Christ Himself, and therefore is a loving Father."


Countless times, I've heard the typical Catholic say that the Pope only "represents" Christ on earth, but not only is that a lie, it is a convenient excuse and a quick response they can give to people who are suspicious of their fallacious religious cult; the truth is the popes of Rome have always considered themselves to be Christ Himself:

"Side by side with the shameless worship of the Virgin in the Church of Rome is the Divine honour paid to the Pope. He has been adored upon the altar, solemnly proclaimed the Vicar of Christ, Ruler of the World, Lord of Lords, the Almighty Vice-general of God, God upon earth, our Lord God. The Pope's official organ [publication] has asserted, that when he thinks it is God that thinks in him, and he is to Christians all that Jesus Christ would be were He now upon earth. This blasphemous homage was not reproved by Pius IX [9th]; it has never been condemned by Leo XIII [8th]."


The above author is correct, the Popes of Rome have never rebuked such statements. Catholic priests attempt to explain away the doctrine of a pope's claim to divinity as simply a "representative," but this is the same idolatrous heresy as trying to explain away the image of "Mary" as nothing more than a "representation." The excuses from Catholics are all in attempt to breach the dam of obvious blasphemy and heresy that floods the Catholic Church.

If you wonder how the Catholic Pope got to a point where he, and others, declared himself to be a god, you need look no further than the origin of the Catholic Church, that is, Rome. The Roman emperor was also declared to be a god; for example:

"On his death, Julius Caesar was officially recognised as a god, the Divine ('Divus') Julius, by the Roman state. And in 29 BC Caesar's adopted son, the first Roman emperor Augustus, allowed the culturally Greek cities of Asia Minor to set up temples to him. This was really the first manifestation of Roman emperor-worship... Emperor-worship was a unifying factor in the Roman world, practiced not only by army units spread throughout the empire but also by individuals in the provinces, where there were collective imperial cult centres at places such as Lyons (Gaul), Pergamon (Asia) and (probably) Colchester (Britain)."

-Nigel Pollard, "Roman Religion Gallery: The Imperial Cult," BBC History, Feb 17, 2011, retrieved Sept 6, 2018, [bbc.co.uk/history/ancient/romans/roman_religion_gallery_06.shtml]

The worship of the Roman emperor being a unifying factor for Romans is exactly the same as the worship of the Roman Catholic Pope being a unifying factor for Roman Catholics. If we wanted to find a true date to address the origin of the Roman Catholic religion, it would not be 325 AD, nor would it be 33 AD, but rather, 29 BC would be much more accurate.

The Catholic Church calls Constantine, the first pope, a "god on earth:"

"Pope Nicolas saith: Constat summum Pontificem a pio Principe... Deum appellatum ('It is well-known that the Pope of the godly prince Constantine was called God'). Likewise the Pope was well content to suffer one of his parasites [one who flatters in exchange for hospitality] to say unto him in the late Council of Lateran: Tu es alter Deus in terris ('Thou art another God on earth'). Likewise Cardillus the Spandiard, in defence of the Pope's late chapter at Trident, oftentimes calleth the Pope a Terrenus Deus ('an earthly God')."

-Publications of the Catholic Truth Society, Vol. 29, 1896, p. 18, [New York Public Library]; Gratiani Decretum, xcvi, can. 7; See also Defence of Apology, Part 5, Chapter 6, Div. 11, p. 583
Pope Pius X (10th, Guiseppe Sarto, 1903-1914) stated: "The Pope is not only the representative of Jesus Christ, but He is Jesus Christ Himself, hidden under the veil of the flesh. Does the Pope speak? It is Jesus Christ that speaks. Does the Pope accord a favor or pronounce an anathema? It is Jesus Christ who pronounces the anathema or accords the favor. So that when the Pope speaks, we have no business to examine—we have only to obey. We have no right to criticize his decisions or discuss his commands. Therefore every one who would wear the crown [rulers of nations] ought to submit himself to Divine Right."


In case you may have not understood that, Pope Pius X declared officially that the Pope IS Jesus Christ, not just a "representative." He also said that all men and women who rule over any nation should kneel to the Pope because he is a so-called "earthly god."

Pius X’s predecessor, Pope Leo XIII (8th, Vincenzo Pecci, 1878-1903), also decreed that the Pope was like unto God Himself: "But the supreme teacher in the Church is the Roman Pontiff. Union of minds, therefore, requires, together with a perfect accord in the one faith, complete submission and obedience of will to the Church and to the Roman Pontiff, as to God Himself."

-Pope Leo XIII, Sapientiae Christianae, 1890, retrieved May 1, 2018, [papalencyclicals.net/Leo13/l13sapie.htm]

It’s interesting to note that what these popes say about themselves is precisely what Satan says in his wicked heart:

How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.

-Isaiah 14:12-15

Earlier, we read from the Catholic Catechism that tradition was to be revered as much as the Bible, but I pointed out that when the traditions of the Catholic Church contradict the Bible, they look to tradition first and foremost before they look at Scripture. In short, tradition is one of their many gods.

And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.

-Matthew 23:9

To help demonstrate that point, even Pope John Paul II understood that giving the Pope such divine titles as "Holy Father" seems contrary to the doctrines of Christ, but he told Catholics to ignore Christ and do it anyway:

'Have no fear when people call me the 'Vicar of Christ,' when they say to me 'Holy Father,' or 'Your Holiness,' or use titles similar to these, which seem even inimical [adverse/opposite] to the Gospel. Christ himself declared: 'Call no one on earth your father; you have but one Father in heaven. Do not be called 'Master'; you have but one master, the Messiah' (Mt 23:9-10). These expressions, nevertheless, have evolved out of a long tradition, becoming part of common usage. One must not be afraid of these words either."

Or in other words, Pope John Paul II is telling you all not to fear God, nor honor Christ's commandments, and that you should blindly follow the traditions of the Catholic Church. He leads Catholics on a path that maintains a rigorous set of complex worship traditions, only to find the end of that path are the gates of hell.

_But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men._
_Matthew 15:9_

_Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy [way of thinking] and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments [first teachings] of the world, and not after Christ._
_Colossians 2:8_

_And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?_
_Luke 6:46_

Until Catholics are humbled to repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing), they will not gain a fear of the Lord. They will instead fear men, the popes and priests of the world's largest cult:

_The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction._
_Proverbs 1:7_

_For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD:_
_Proverbs 1:29_

_So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me._
_Hebrews 13:6_

The Lord God has told us that the popes are fools who despise wisdom and instruction in the truth, and thus, Catholics are highly esteeming complete fools. The things of this world, like the Catholic popes, which are highly respected among men are hated in the sight of God:

_And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God._
_Luke 16:15_

_The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?_
_Jeremiah 17:9_

John Paul II also wrote:

"[W]e readily understand the devotion of Saint Francis of Assisi for 'the Lord Pope', the daughterly outspokenness of Saint Catherine of Siena towards the one whom she called 'sweet Christ on earth',”


I've watched various video interviews from Catholics, priests and nuns, calling their Pope "The Good Shepherd," (the name given to Christ) and saying that being with him is like standing in the presence of God. (They are more likely to confess these things when a born again Christian is not present to preach the truth of God's Word to them.) There is no Biblical justification for this; it's heresy from a pagan cult that has nothing to do with the Lord Jesus Christ.

_And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth._
_Matthew 28:18_

_I am the LORD: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images._
_Isaiah 42:8_
But the popes of Rome have assumed the power and glory of God unto themselves, and declared that there are other methods to salvation apart from the Lord Jesus Christ, as John Paul II wrote:

"I recently wrote to the bishops of Asia: 'Although the Church gladly acknowledges whatever is true and holy in the religious traditions of Buddhism, Hinduism and Islam as a reflection of that truth which enlightens all people, this does not lessen her duty and resolve to proclaim without fail Jesus Christ who is 'the way, and the truth, and the life.'... The fact that the followers of other religions can receive God's grace and be saved by Christ apart from the ordinary means which he has established does not thereby cancel the call to faith and baptism which God wills for all people.'"


Thus, if you are a Catholic, you must believe that all people in other religions are saved by their own means, no matter what pagan god they worship because, according to Catholic decree, to question and argue against the Pope would be the equivalent of questioning and arguing against Christ Himself. It doesn't matter if the Pope says that people are "called to faith in Christ," because as soon as he says that there are other methods to salvation, "the way, truth, and life" of Christ is made void.

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

-John 14:6

However, because the wicked popes of Rome literally believe they are Jesus Christ in the flesh, they teach that all who do not come to the Catholic Pope to pay homage will end up in hell via anathema, which we read earlier. Those readers who have been paying close attention may already see a major contradiction with this, as John Paul II continues to say:

"The universality of salvation means that it is granted not only to those who explicitly believe in Christ and have entered the Church."


Even though Christ just told us that no one can come unto the Father except through Him, the Pope says there are other ways. John Paul II also contradicts Boniface VIII, who we read earlier when he said that "it is absolutely necessary for salvation that every human creature be subject to the Roman Pontiff." They can't both be right; someone's wrong, and the reality is that both of them are liars.

Just as politicians, Catholic authorities often contradict themselves and flip-flop on their positions based on the political sways of the public, so that they may gain more power and wealth, until a time comes where they once again can assume absolute control over the people. In the next chapter, we'll find out what it means when the Roman Catholic Church takes the seat of absolute power.

Again, this is all part of the ecumenical movement, which is an effort to create a one-world religion under the Pope's authority. This is why born again Christians call his throne "the Seat of an Antichrist." In John Paul II's book, he makes many statements which indicate that almost any religious belief will lead to heaven:

- The Catholic Church accepts truth and holiness from all false religions. (p. 46)
- Hinduism is another means of taking refuge in God. (p. 46)
- Buddhism is a religion of Salvation. (p. 48)
- Islam worships the One True God. (p. 52)
- The Holy Spirit is present in every religion. (p. 47)

(See Pope John Paul II, Crossing the Threshold of Hope, Knopf Doubleday Publishing Group, 1995, ISNB: 9780679765615)

It should be no surprise that the Catholic Church supports almost all false religious ideology, including the doctrine of Evolutionism:
John Paul II rejects God's account of Genesis and lends ear to heretics:

"The Church's magisterium is directly concerned with the question of evolution, for it involves the conception of man."


The Lord God, though His prophet Moses, stated clearly in Exodus 20 that the creation week was one typical work week just as we experience today, and the Lord Jesus Christ stated clearly that if you don't believe what Moses wrote, then you can't believe Christ either:

_Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it._

-Exodus 20:9-11

_For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?_

-John 5:47

(The Earth's Age Affects Salvation Doctrine" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The heathens at the National Center for Science Education, an American organization solely devoted to the promotion of Evolutionism, quoted John Paul II to support their religious monkey-to-man doctrine; trying to rally more Catholics to their cause:

_The Catholic Church certainly does not endorse creationism. This is clearly attested by reference to the concluding statement of the historic conference of paleontologists, geneticists, and molecular biologists which met from May 24th to May 27th, 1982, at the Pontifical Academy of Sciences in the Vatican Gardens. After working together under the direction of Carlos Chagas, Brazilian neurophysiologist and scientific advisor to Pope John Paul II, the group concluded that: 'We freely acknowledge that there is room for differences of opinion on such problems as species formation and the mechanisms of evolutionary change. Nevertheless, we are convinced that masses of evidence render the application of the concept of evolution to man and other primates beyond serious dispute.'"


More recently, Pope Francis made the following statement to the Pontifical Academy of Sciences in support of Evolutionism's many heresies:

_When we read about creation in Genesis, we run the risk of imagining God was a magician, with a magic wand able to do everything. But that is not so... He created human beings and let them develop according to the internal laws that he gave to each one so they would reach their fulfillment._


These popes do not believe what Moses wrote, and that's because they do not believe on the Lord Jesus Christ. Again, they claim that with their mouths, but their hearts are far from him.

_This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me._

-Matthew 15:8
The Catholic Church's ecumenical push towards a one-world religion is the purpose for them accepting all religions into one unit; claiming they are all going to heaven. It's also for this reason that Pope Francis declared that proselytizing/evangelism (i.e. preaching of the Gospel to win souls - Pro 11:30) was too controversial, and that evangelism does not grow the Kingdom of God:
"The Church, the Kingdom of God, does not grow by proselytizing."

Thus, what Francis is claiming is that men have no need to be converted:

_Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;_  
-Acts 3:19

A few weeks later, Francis attempted to redefine evangelism when asked, "During this journey you spoke of dialogue for peacebuilding. But what is your priority: evangelization or a dialogue for peace?" "Evangelism is not proselytizing. The Church grows not through proselytizing but through attraction... one young man asked me this question: 'What should I say to a university classmate, a friend, a good person, but who is atheist? What should I tell him in order to change him, to convert him?' This was the response: 'The last thing you should do is to say something.'"

First, I want to point out that Francis says the church should grow by "attraction," which is exactly how most of the church buildings in America operate today. They don't base what they do on the truth of the Word of God, but rather, they try to use the methods of worldly lusts to attract numbers, creating more of a country club than a church. (Read "What's Wrong With Christian Rock?" & "Fantasy Novels: Invitations to Hell" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Francis's statement also contradicts Christ's most basic commandments, and it goes against the entire example that was set for us in the New Testament:

_Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen._  
-Matthew 28:19-20

Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.  
-2 Timothy 4:2
Though we born again Christians do good works, pleasing our Heavenly Father, Christ did not say that people would be attracted to us through good works, but rather, that we would be hated among men for teaching the truth:

Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.
- Luke 6:23

Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.
- 2 Timothy 3:12

As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; only lest they should suffer persecution for the cross of Christ.
- Galatians 6:12

The average Catholic has an extraordinarily difficult time accepting the truth, namely, that their beloved popes have spoken so much antichrist doctrine against the Word of God, but once we understand how little the Catholic Church cares about the Word of God, it only makes sense why they make such blasphemous and heretical statements. Let's read this quote one more time from the Catholic Catechism:

"As a result the Church, to whom the transmission and interpretation of Revelation is entrusted, 'does not derive her certainty about all revealed truths from the holy Scriptures alone. Both Scripture and Tradition must be accepted and honored with equal sentiments of devotion and reverence.'"
- Catechism of the Catholic Church, "The Transmission of Divine Revelation," Part 1, Section 1, Chapter 2, Article 2, Canon #82, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p1s1c2a2.htm]

What we need to understand is that I call Catholic priests heretics, and they call me a heretic, but what's the difference? My accusation of heresy is based on the Word of the Living God, whereas their accusation of heresy is based on the traditions of fallible men. The following is from the 1917 edition of the Catholic Code of Canon Law in which tells us that if you repent (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing) and believe on the Lord Jesus Christ for your salvation, but at the same time deny Catholic tradition, then they label you a heretic, apostate, and schismatic (meaning you are a "divider" against their ecumenical tradition):

"A baptized Christian, who calls himself a Christian, yet obstinately [stubbornly] denies or calls into doubt any of the truths [i.e. traditions] to be believed by Divine and Catholic faith, is a heretic; if he abandons the Christian faith altogether he is called an apostate; if, finally, he refuses to be subject to the Supreme Pontiff, or to have communication with the members of the Church subject to the Roman Pontiff, he is a schismatic."

By the way, it should be noted that we who are born again in Christ do not refuse communication with Catholics. We refuse communion with Catholics, which means we refuse to be yoked together with them, spending our time in familiarity with them because we care more about their eternal souls than anything else.

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?
- 2 Corinthians 6:14

Of course, the wording the Catholic Church used was updated in 1983 in order to match the ecumenical traditions (because otherwise, they would alienate all the other false religions they now pander towards), which is no surprise because the Catholic Church has always altered their official doctrines to match the political movements of the day. What may surprise Catholics to learn is that the Catholic Church believes that reading the Bible will cause men to denounce Jesus Christ, as this Catholic missionary states:

"The Reformation produced indeed an exaggerated individualism, which by declaring every man equally competent to find out the doctrines of the Saviour from his own private reading of the Scriptures, has led millions to the utter denial of Christ and His doctrines of faith and morality."
- Bertrand L. Conway (Catholic Priest), The Question-box Answers: Replies to Questions Received on Missions to Non-Catholics, The Catholic Book Exchange, 1903, p. 131, [New York Public Library]
Again, the Catholic Church states that if you read the doctrines of Christ, you will end up denying Christ. That doesn't even make sense. What's really happening is that those who read the doctrines of Christ end up following Christ, and Christ will lead them out of the Catholic Church, which is what the Word of God teaches us:

So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.
-Romans 10:17

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.
-2 Timothy 2:15

Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.
-2 Peter 1:20

But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.
-1 Corinthians 2:10

The Catholic Church doesn't believe in this Spirit that reveals the truth unto us. They believe you have to go through the private interpretations of the Catholic Church.

But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.
-1 John 2:27

A preacher like myself is a useful tool that Christians can use, meaning that these teachings can be an assistance to your understanding of God's Word, but I am not necessary for the education of my brethren in Christ because they learn from the Spirit of the Living God. Catholics don't understand this because they do not have that Spirit:

But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.
-1 Corinthians 2:14

That is why the Catholic priests make statements like these:

"Deny the [Catholic] Church's infallible witness, and lo! the Bible is reduced to the level of mere Oriental literature, full of errors and utterly devoid of divine inspiration... so that St. Augustine could rightly say in the fifth century: 'I would not believe the gospel unless moved thereto by the authority of the [Catholic] Church.' ... There is nowhere in the New Testament a clear, methodical statement of the teachings of Christ."

-Bertrand L. Conway (Catholic Priest), The Question-box Answers: Replies to Questions Received on Missions to Non-Catholics, The Catholic Book Exchange, 1903, p. 66, [New York Public Library]

If you look up the reference and read this priest's statements for yourself, he continues on the next page to say that the Bible is NOT a safe book to read. The Catholic Church wants Catholics to stay away from the Bible because the truth in the Word of God will lead Catholics to Christ, and coming to Christ will lead them AWAY from Rome and her Pontiff.

Karl Keating, founder of Catholic Answers Magazine, took part in a live debate in which he never quoted Scripture, while his opponent quoted it often. During the discussion Keating attempted to defend the inspiration of Scripture, and during Q&A, a young man stood up and asked Keating why he was not quoting from the Bible during the debate, and he responded:

"You know, people have different ways of speaking... I don't believe in giving chapter and verse because, first, it's a waste of time... and second, I didn't bring my Bible because I don't like to flip through pages and read from it out to the audience when I try to read from my notes."

-Catholic Layman Karl Keating, Debate between Peter Ruckman and Karl Keating, Bayview Baptist Church, retrieved Dec 26, 2013, [http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=stS4eveIbQQ - 2:09:00]
In case you may not have understood that, I'll interpret: According to Keating, his personal notes are more important than the Word of God. In short, he really worships himself, and is afraid that quoting the Word of God alongside his comments would reveal his ignorance of Scripture. Again, this should be no surprise after we've learned that the Catholic Church holds traditions of men in higher authority than the Bible, and how Catholic priests don't really learn much Scripture. (In Chapter 9, we'll find out that most nuns don't learn or study the Bible either.)

"Historically, we are certain that the Bible has never been the way to find out Christ...it has ever been practically impossible for men, generally, to find out Christ from the Bible only."
- Bertrand L. Conway (Catholic Priest), The Question-box Answers: Replies to Questions Received on Missions to Non-Catholics, The Catholic Book Exchange, 1903, p. 70, [New York Public Library]

Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.
-Mark 13:31

For ever, O LORD, thy word is settled in heaven.
-Psalm 119:89

How sweet are thy words unto my taste! yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth! Through thy precepts I get understanding: therefore I hate every false way. Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.
-Psalm 119:103-105

Despite God pointing mankind to look to His Word, the Catholic popes throughout the past 1700 years have pointed mankind to themselves, to their antichrist throne, transgressing against the Word of God through their traditions, and making God's Word void to the hearers because of their countless hypocrisies.

Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.
-Mark 7:13

But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?
-Matthew 15:3

This Catholic message of abandoning the Word of God for the words of the popes has been key in conditioning Catholics (who, statistically, make up around ¼ of the world's current population) to join in the ecumenical agenda. On Oct 27, 1986, in Assisi, Italy, John Paul II invited the leaders of many false religions from all over the world, from Buddhists to Native American witchdoctors, to pray for "peace."

Pope John Paul II - World's Religious Leaders Together

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9_9J1m9xkV4

"[The] Pope is currently leading the greatest ecumenical movement in history, in order to unite all religions under Rome's leadership. In 1986, Pope John Paul II gathered in Assisi, Italy the leaders of the world's major religions to pray for peace. There were snake worshipers, fire worshipers, spiritists, animists, Buddhists, Muslims, Hindus, North American witchdoctors; I watched in astonishment as they walked to the microphone to pray. The pope said they were all praying to the same god, and that their prayers were creating a spiritual energy that was bringing about a new climate for peace. John Paul II allowed his good friend, the Dalai Lama, to put the Buddha on the altar in St. Peter's Church in Assisi, and with his monks, to have a Buddhist worship ceremony there while Shintoists chanted and rang their bells outside. The prophesied world religion is in the process of being formed before our eyes, and the Vatican is the headquarters of the movement."

Again, this should be no surprise since other famous Catholic icons have taught and believed in the exact same way; all of them guilty of idolatry while claiming that they are not idolaters. For example, few people today know that Mother Teresa prayed at pagan altars, and bowed before Buddha statues, as she traveled around the world.

(Read "Wolves in Costume: Mother Teresa" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)
Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division:
-Luke 12:51

For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.
-1 Thessalonians 5:3

(Read “Did Christ Come to Bring Peace?” here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

There is a unity in the Spirit of God, as Scripture teaches us, but the Spirit of the Holy God is not with the Catholic Church; their "world peace" is a false peace that will bring destruction. Keep in mind that we've already read quotations from the popes themselves that they are "God on earth," and therefore, what this ecumenical movement is about is bringing all under the Catholic Pope's leadership, so they will worship him as a god.

This worshiping popes as gods is nothing new, and it can easily be seen by how the people act when a pope comes to town. In fact, they're willing to poop their pants for him, and this is not a joke or satire; this is from the Associated Press:

"When Pope Francis visits the Philippines next week, traffic enforcers won't let the capital's streets get gridlocked if they have to answer the call of nature. About 2,000 traffic enforcers who will be on duty during the 15-19 January papal visit will be required to wear adult diapers, the Metropolitan Manila Development Authority chairman, Francis Tolentino, said. Tolentino also encouraged people who will wait for hours to see the pope to also wear diapers. The prospect of wearing diapers while on duty was 'well received' by his men, he said on Wednesday."


Even during this event in which thousands of adults would be walking around in their own filth, idolatry was at the forefront of the celebration:

"The Black Nazarene procession attracts hundreds of thousands of barefoot, mostly male, Filipino Roman Catholics, who parade a centuries-old black statue of Jesus Christ which devotees believe possess mystical powers that could cure ailments and answer wishes of good health and fortune. Tolentino says there won't be enough portable toilets for the millions of people expected to see Pope Francis hold an open-air mass at the seaside Rizal Park on 18 January. 'If you attend an event that will last for 24 hours, you cannot go around looking for a [portable toilet],’ Tolentino said. Priests, nuns, seminarians, and the elderly also should consider wearing diapers, he said. Asked if he will also wear one, Tolentino said, 'I will try, but in my case, I have less hydration.'"


Again, these people are worshiping idols, both in statue form and in the form of their Pope, hoping to get a special indulgence from him. These Catholics don't want anything to do with the Christian God of the Bible, and are willing to do very inconvenient things to upkeep the facade.

And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;
-Romans 1:28

You will not find any Biblical justification for anyone claiming to be of Christ to worship in a mosque, tell the Muslims they're worshiping the same 'god', and then kiss the Qur'an. The popes of this world have little understanding of the Word of God, and I pray the Lord Jesus Christ could use this article to help a Catholic that has a humbled heart that wants to serve the Lord Jesus Christ.

(Read "Islam: Religion of Terror" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

I've had angry Catholics write me and ask how some no-name layman like me could dare to question the so-called "holy" Pope of Rome. I simply tell them that, the next time Francis, or any other future pope, is in my area, tell him to come visit, and I'll be glad to set him straight on the Word of God because the Lord Jesus Christ has already told us that such men (high and lofty, with grand, self-serving titles) are not chosen by God to preach His Word; rather, God chooses the lowly and base to preach His Word, so that no flesh should glory in His presence:
For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty: And base [worthless] things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: That no flesh should glory in his presence.

-1 Corinthians 1:26-29

The eyes of the popes become dull through the incense they keep burning before the image of Mary, and thus, they believe that Christ failed in His sacrifice on the cross, as Francis stated in 2015:

"The cross shows us a different way of measuring success. Ours is to plant the seeds. God sees to the fruits of our labors. And if at times our efforts and works seem to fail and not produce fruit, we need to remember that we are followers of Jesus Christ and his life, humanly speaking, ended in failure, the failure of the cross."


Christ never failed; He fulfilled everything that was foretold of Him thousands of years before His arrival. The Bible tells us that Christ's sacrifice on the cross brought us victory, not failure.

But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

-1 Corinthians 15:57

In the next paragraph, Francis continued to say:

"Another danger another danger emerges when we become jealous of our free time, when we think that surrounding ourselves with worldly comforts help us to serve better. The problem with this way of reasoning is that it can blunt the power of god's daily call to conversion, to encounter with him."


When I read Francis's words, my first thought was: "Is he joking?" Is the world so blind that they cannot see the overwhelming elephant of hypocrisy sitting in the corner? If no one else will point out this hypocrisy, then I will: The following image is the inside of St. Peter's Basilica, which houses the papal enclave in Vatican City; please look at it closely and ask yourself if it is possible that the Catholic Church might be guilty of "surrounding themselves with worldly comforts to help them serve better."

There isn't a pope in history that hasn't surrounded himself with lavish comforts, while hypocritically preaching to the public about charity, tithing, and living meekly. The next image is considered a "relic" that sits in a museum in Kansas; it was John Paul II's private bed for his private bedroom in his private jet.
And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. 
-Matthew 8:20

Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip [cash money], nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. 
-Luke 10:3-4

And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not. 
-2 Peter 2:2-3

I could go on for many hours just describing the tiniest fraction of Catholic wealth and lavish comfort that surrounds their priests and bishops. What incredible hypocrisy for any Catholic pope to tell everyone else that they need to humble themselves; they glory in that for which they should be ashamed.

For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things. 
-Philippians 3:18-19

Pope Francis, since he was made Pope of Rome, has put on a facade of supposed "humility," and the media has swallowed it whole. I've seen the photos taken where Pope Francis stayed in a "normal" hotel room instead of a royal suite, and how he personally came down to the front desk to pay his bill, but basically, what the media and the Catholic Church wants us to do is give praise to this wicked pope for attempting act in a manner that resembles a normal person! (That's absurd!) But remember that the Catholic Church believes that their Pope is Christ on earth, and so therefore, they consider him to be divine, and thus, his doing something so incredibly simple, like paying a hotel bill, is foolishly perceived to be, and treated like, divine intervention.

In March of 2013, Pope Francis gave a speech and because he used complex Catholic terms, many people didn't understand what he said:

"I thank the Lord that I can celebrate this Holy Mass for the inauguration of my Petrine ministry." 

The word "Petrine" means in relation to Peter the apostle of Christ, and thus, Francis declaring HIS "Petrine" ministry, as a descendant of Peter, which is defined in the Catholic Catechism as supreme, universal rule over all:

"The Pope, Bishop of Rome and Peter's successor, is the perpetual and visible source and foundation of the unity both of the bishops and of the whole company of the faithful. For the Roman Pontiff, by reason of his office as Vicar of Christ, and as pastor of the entire Church has full, supreme, and universal power over the whole Church, a power which he can always exercise unhindered. The college or body of bishops has no authority unless united with the Roman Pontiff."

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "The Episcopal College and Its Head, The Pope," Vatican Archives, Part 1, Section 2, Chapter 3, Article 9, Paragraph 882-883, retrieved June 8, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p123a9p4.htm]
Thus, Francis is declaring himself to be Christ on earth, and so his every word and action is considered to be divine. In the same speech, Francis says that it is the job of the entire world to protect things, and he lists out what he's referring to:

"To protect Jesus with Mary, to protect the whole of creation, to protect each person, especially the poorest, to protect ourselves: this is a service that the Bishop of Rome is called to carry out, yet one to which all of us are called, so that the star of hope will shine brightly."


In what manner does Jesus, who is God, need protection? When did He call on Christians to be His personal bodyguards? The Lord Jesus Christ needs no protection; that's absurd! It is Jesus Christ who protects us, not the other way around, but again, because Pope Francis is considered to be Jesus, therefore, he is calling for the world, not just Catholics, but also (as he said in his speech) politicians, economists, and many others to come to his aid and protect himself. (So much for that humble persona the media keeps showing us.)

A Catholic dare not say that Pope Francis misspoke either. The Catholic Church declares that when popes speak ex cathedra (with full authority), they are "infallible," meaning that they are not capable of making a mistake.

infallibility (adj): not fallible; not capable of erring; entirely exempt from liability to mistake
(See 'infallibility', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved June 1, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

The Secretary to the Vatican Council stated:

"[W]e teach and define as a divinely revealed dogma that when the Roman Pontiff speaks EX CATHEDRA, that is, when, in the exercise of his office as shepherd and teacher of all Christians, in virtue of his supreme apostolic authority, he defines a doctrine concerning faith or morals to be held by the whole Church, he possesses, by the divine assistance promised to him in blessed Peter, that infallibility which the divine Redeemer willed his Church to enjoy in defining doctrine concerning faith or morals. Therefore, such definitions of the Roman Pontiff are of themselves, and not by the consent of the Church, irreformable."


Most Catholics are very aware that their priests teach that the Pope is infallible, but in order to counter authors like me, they tell them it's ONLY when he's speaking ex cathedra. However, that's a convenient lie because that's never been the official teaching of the Catholic Church, and we can learn more details by looking at the Catechism:

"Bishops who teach in communion with the Roman Pontiff are to be revered by all as witnesses of divine and Catholic truth; the faithful, for their part, are obliged to submit to their bishops' decision, made in the name of Christ, in matters of faith and morals, and to adhere to it with a ready and respectful allegiance of mind. This loyal submission of the will and intellect must be given, in a special way, to the authentic teaching authority of the Roman Pontiff, even when he does not speak ex cathedra in such wise, indeed, that his supreme teaching authority be acknowledged with respect, and that one sincerely adhere to decisions made by him,"


This means one of two things; either the Catholic Church teaches that all Catholics have to submit to all commandments made by the Pope without question, even if he is wrong (i.e. fallible), or, they have to submit to all commandments made by the Pope without question because he is infallible. Either way, they have to submit to him, and the infallibility of the Roman Pope is, in simple terms, laughable. As explained by the Catechism, Catholics are expected to treat the Pope's doctrines and commandments as if he is speaking ex cathedra, even when he is NOT speaking ex cathedra.

It should also be noted that there is no method by which any Catholic can determine if the Pope is speaking ex cathedra or not. In other words, if he's right, the priests claim he was speaking ex cathedra, but if he's wrong and contradicts himself, the priests claim he wasn't speaking ex cathedra. In short, ex cathedra and papal infallibility is facade; a convenient excuse to keep Catholics in line, and convince them to never question a pope, bishop, or priest under any circumstance. (i.e. If you can never question them, then you can never find out the truth.)
In 1302, Pope Boniface VIII issued an official decree, which would typically be taken to be speaking *ex cathedra*, that required everyone follow his commandments. He titled his decree *Unam Sanctam*, meaning "the One Holy" in context of the Catholic Church being united in the following doctrine:

"Furthermore, we declare, we proclaim, we define that it is absolutely necessary for salvation that every human creature be subject to the Roman Pontiff."

- Pope Boniface VIII, "*Unam Sanctam*," *New Advent*, Nov 18, 1302, retrieved June 1, 2018, [newadvent.org/library/docs_bo08us.htm]; Transcribed by Bob VanCleef, Department of Philosophy at the Catholic University of America, 1927.

The popes, bishops and priests of the Catholic Church don't typically teach that today because they've evolved into the ecumenical (one-world) movement. As we've already seen, they teach that Muslims, Buddhists, and all other pagan cults around the world, have salvation and are praying to the same god. Thus, the Catholic Church teaches that their popes are both infallible and fallible at the same time, contradicting one another repeatedly, while requiring all Catholics to follow each new pope without question.

On the other hand, even though the Catholic popes, bishops, and priests have an ecumenical agenda, the official teaching of Boniface VII in official Catholic decrees, like First Vatican Council, telling all the world that if you don't accept the Catholic Pope as supreme ruler, then you are damned to destruction:

"So, then, if anyone says that the Roman Pontiff has merely an office of supervision and guidance, and not the full and supreme power of jurisdiction over the whole Church, and this not only in matters of faith and morals, but also in those which concern the discipline and government of the Church dispersed throughout the whole world; or that he has only the principal part, but not the absolute fullness, of this supreme power; or that this power of his is not ordinary and immediate both over all and each of the Churches and over all and each of the pastors and faithful: let him be anathema."


The 19th century preacher Charles Spurgeon wrote the following, which I think is well-stated:

"Of all the dreams that ever deluded men, and probably of all blasphemies that ever were uttered, there has never been one which is more absurd and which is more fruitful in all manner of mischief than the idea that the Bishop of Rome can be the head of the Church of Jesus Christ! No, these popes die, and are not! And how could the Church live if its head were dead? The true Head ever lives and the Church ever lives in Him!"


"These people who received honour [popes, bishops, and priests of Rome] had a further difficulty, namely, that, always receiving this undeserved honour, they deceived themselves into believing that they deserved it. A man who deludes other people, by degrees comes to delude himself. The deluder first makes dupes of others and then becomes a dupe to himself. I should not wonder but that the Pope really believes that he is infallible, and that he ought to be saluted as 'his holiness.' It must have taken him a good time to arrive at that eminence of self-deception, but he has got to that, I dare say, by now, and everyone who kisses his toe confirms him in his insane idea. When everybody else believes a flattering falsehood concerning you, you come at last to believe it yourself, or at least to think that it may be so. These Pharisees, being continually called 'the learned rabbi,' 'the holy scribe,' 'the devout and pious doctor,' 'the sanctified teacher,' almost believed the flattering compliments. They used very grand phrases in those days, and doctors of divinity were very common, almost as common as they are now; and the crowd of doctors and rabbis helped to keep each other in countenance by repeating one another's fine names till they believed they meant something. Dear friends, it is very difficult to receive honour and to expect it, and yet to keep your eyesight; for men's eyes gradually grow dull through the smoke of the incense which is burned before them;"

-Charles Spurgeon, quoted in *The Metropolitan Tabernacle Pulpit*, Sermons Preached by Spurgeon in 1875, p. 413; Read "Respecting Persons is Sin" here at creationliberty.com for more details.

Praise God that He has made me an anathema out of the wicked Catholic Church, and that He has taught me to sanctify (i.e. divide) myself away from the lies and confusion of the world's largest cult. They teach one thing, then turn around later and teach the exact opposite, which I pointed out early that the Bible calls "double-minded," and because double-minded men are unstable in all their ways, they will end up leaving a trail of bodies in their path.

*A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.*

- James 1:8
Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

-Revelation 22:14-15

For the unstable minds of the popes of Rome, that murderous trail of bodies is more well-known as "The Inquisition."

#8 – Catholic Inquisition: The Result of Papal Rule

inquisition (n): inquiry; examination; a searching; in some Catholic countries, a court or tribunal established for the examination and punishment of heretics; this court was established in the twelfth century via Pope Innocent III (See "inquisition" American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved June 6, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

As with almost all aspects of history, the further removed we are in time from a particular event, the more it is forgotten. For example, the Jewish Holocaust by the German Nazis in World War II is famously known and understood by the population of most countries around the world since, at the time I'm writing this, it was less than 100 years ago, but because the Catholic Inquisition ended almost two hundred years ago, and because it was overshadowed by more recent events like the Nazi regime, many people have forgotten it.

For there is no remembrance of the wise more than of the fool for ever; seeing that which now is in the days to come shall all be forgotten. And how dieth the wise man? as the fool.

-Ecclesiastes 2:16

Though the Holocaust only lasted a few years, the Catholic Inquisition lasted over 600 years, and whereas the Holocaust only targeted Jews, the Catholic Inquisition targeted everyone, including born again Christians, Muslims, and alleged "witches," just to name a few. In short, the Catholic Inquisition is a result of the Catholic Church being given supreme power over everyone, including governments, and countless numbers were tortured in unspeakable ways, dying brutal deaths by the hands of the priests and bishops of Rome.

In the early 13th century, groups of Christians in southern France and northern Italy began to study the Bible and sanctify themselves from the Catholic Church. There were various groups given many names (e.g. Waldensians, Albigensians, etc) and they rejected many of the foundational doctrines of the Catholic Church, for example, the sacraments of the Catholic Eucharist, and the lavish wealth and lifestyles of the Catholic clergy, declaring publically that these things opposed the doctrines of Christ.

The Albigensians began to grow in number, which also meant that Catholic numbers began to decrease in this region, and of course, the Catholic Church labeled them "heretics," but there was no standard, universal way of dealing with those who the Catholic Church labeled as heretics. Prior to this time, the situation was left up to the discretion of individual bishops in the region where the so-called "heresy" took place, which is known in the Catholic Church as a "diocese". (die-oh-sis) It was at this time that certain men in the Catholic Church were given authority to imprison, torture, and execute all those who opposed the Catholic Church, and they would later be known as the "Inquisitors."

Though many different people of various cultures and beliefs were tortured and executed by the Catholic Church through the office of Inquisition, it all began as persecution against the New Testament Church in the 13th century: "When the reformed religion began to diffuse [spread] the Gospel light throughout Europe, Pope Innocent III entertained great fear for the Romish Church. He accordingly instituted a number of inquisitors, or persons who were to make inquiry after, apprehend, and punish, heretics, as the reformed were called by the papists. At the head of these inquisitors was one Dominic, who had been canonized by the pope, in order to render his authority the more respectable. Dominic, and the other inquisitors, spread themselves into various Roman Catholic countries, and treated the Protestants with the utmost severity. In process of time, the pope, not finding these roving inquisitors so useful as he had imagined, resolved upon the establishment of fixed and regular courts of Inquisition. After the order for these regular courts, the first office of Inquisition was established in the city of Toulouse, and Dominic became the first regular inquisitor, as he had before been the first roving [wandering] inquisitor."

Pope Innocent III's predecessors had built a Catholic army of Crusaders (trained soldiers designed to war against the Muslim armies) to command and dispose of at his will, and so he used their might to help the enforce the will of the Inquisitors. As we read in previous chapters, the Catholic Church clearly taught that the popes of Rome were never to be questioned, and that their existence was necessary for salvation, but never did one of those popes ever speak a word of rebuke against the torture and murder of the Office of Inquisition; rather, each pope after Innocent III assisted and added to the atrocities of the Inquisition:

"The record of the Inquisition would be embarrassing for any organization; for the Catholic Church, it is devastating. Today, it prides itself, and with much justification, on being the defender of natural law and the rights of man. The papacy in particular likes to see itself as the champion of morality. What history shows is that for more than six centuries without a break, the papacy was the sworn enemy of elementary justice. Of eighty popes in a line from the 13th century on, not one of them disapproved of the theology and apparatus of the Inquisition. On the contrary, one after another added his own cruel touches to the workings of this deadly machine."


It's important to understand that the author I just quoted is a Roman Catholic historian; meaning that this is coming from historians within the Catholic Church's own ranks. Here are the writings of another Roman Catholic historian from the 19th century, who was extremely dedicated to the Catholic religion, even saying that he did not have the "slightest shadow of doubt about any dogma of the Catholic Church," and he wrote the following about the Inquisition:

"The Inquisition is peculiarly the weapon and peculiarly the work of the popes. It stands out from all those things in which they co-operated, followed or assented as the distinctive feature of papal Rome. It was set up, renewed and perfected by a long series of acts emanating from the supreme authority in the [Catholic] Church. No other institution, no doctrine, no ceremony is so distinctly the individual creation of the papacy, except the dispensing power. It is the principal thing with which the papacy is identified, and by which it must be judged. The principle of the Inquisition is the Pope's sovereign power over life and death. Whosoever disobeys him should be tried and tortured and burnt. If that cannot be done, formalities may be dispensed with, and the culprit may be killed like an outlaw. That is to say, the principle of the Inquisition is murderous, and a man's opinion of the papacy is regulated and determined by his opinion of religious assassination. If he honestly looks on it as an abomination, he can only accept the Primacy with a drawback, with precaution, suspicion, and aversion for its acts. If he accepts the Primacy [office of the Catholic Church and Inquisition] with confidence, admiration, unconditional obedience, he must have made terms with murder."


Many of the people who were tortured and executed by the Catholic Inquisitors was over the matter of the Eucharist; meaning that they refused to believe that the bread and wine was the literal body and blood of Christ, which we discussed in Chapter 3. The Catholic Eucharist is an overt heresy to the Gospel of Christ, and it is this idolatry that is so contradictory to our faith in Christ that we Christians are (through the power of the Holy Spirit in us) willing to suffer and die at the hands of our persecutors for that belief in the Word of God.

These are a few examples of the tortured Christians by the Catholic Church:

- John Badby was burned at the stake by the Catholic Church in 1410 because he said, "it was impossible that any priest should make the body of Christ, by words sacramentally spoken." [i.e. transubstantiation]
- John Stilman was burned alive by the Catholic Church in 1518 for, "speaking against the worshipping, praying, and offering unto images; as also for denying the carnal and corporal presence in the sacrament of Christ's memorial. [which means he denied bread and wine to be the literal Body and Blood of Christ and called out the idolatry of Catholicism]"
- Thomas Man, 1518, was burned at the stake by the Catholic Church because he, "denied the corporal presence of Christ's body in the sacrament of the altar; he believed that images ought not to be worshipped."
John Philpot was burned at the stake by the Catholic Church in 1555 for similar reasons, and telling the Catholic Bishops, "I thank God that I am a heretic out of your cursed church; I am no heretic before God. But God bless you, and give you grace to repent your wicked doings, and let all men beware of your bloody church."


John Lambert was burned alive very slowly by the Catholic Church in 1538 because when asked if the bread was the literal Body of Christ, he replied, "I deny it to be the body of Christ."


To understand the brutal nature of the Inquisitors, let's take a closer look at the last man on the list, John Lambert. His execution took place in Smithfield, a place in which so many Christians were burned alive, the smell of smoldering flesh probably still lingers in the air:

"As touching the terrible manner and fashion of the burning of this blessed martyr, here is to be noted, that of all others who have been burned and offered up at Smithfield, there was yet none so cruelly and piteously handled as he. For, after that his legs were consumed and burned up to the stumps, and that the wretched tormentors and enemies of God had withdrawn the fire from him, so that but a small fire and coals were left under him, then two that stood on each side of him, with their halberts pitched him upon their pikes, as far as the chain would reach, after the manner and form that is described in the picture adjoined. Then he, lifting up such hands as he had, and his fingers' ends flaming with fire, cried unto the people in these words, 'None but Christ, none but Christ;' and so, being let down again from their halberts, fell into fire, and there ended his life."


For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

-1 Timothy 2:5

In case you didn't understand what he was describing, the Catholic Church set fire to this man because he refused to confess the Catholic heresy of transubstantiation; meaning that he would not believe that the wafer and wine was the literal body and blood of Christ. Half-way through his burning, still alive, skin smoldering, when his legs had been burned to his thighs, they stopped the fire, impaled his stumped legs with spears, and lifted him up high above the crowd to give him another chance to confess the Catholic heresy, but instead he shouted, "None but Christ!"

Eyewitness testimony of the Catholic Church's execution of John Lambert. While his legs were burned off, with his dying breath declared that Christ was the only mediator between God and men. (1Ti 2:5)

Whereas those of us born again in Christ are willing to suffer and die for the Lord Jesus Christ, the Catholic Church is not willing to do the same. They are only willing to torture and kill for the false god they serve.
It wasn't just the Christians who stood firmly on the foundation of the Word of God, but anyone could have been vaguely accused of heresy and been found guilty by an Inquisitor. This is why Inquisitors (and their lackeys) were so feared; they had power so great, they were feared by some European kings. The Inquisitors of the Catholic Church could torture and execute someone on simply a rumor, or make up one themselves, without any evidence whatsoever, and there was no governing power to keep them in check.

"Courts of Inquisition were now erected in several countries; but the Spanish Inquisition became the most powerful, and the most dreaded of any. Even the kings of Spain themselves, though arbitrary in all other respects, were taught to dread the power of the lords of the Inquisition; and the horrid cruelties they exercised compelled multitudes, who differed in opinion from the Roman Catholics, carefully to conceal their sentiments... The most zealous of all the popish monks, and those who most implicitly obeyed the Church of Rome, were the Dominicans and Franciscans: these, therefore, the pope thought proper to invest with an exclusive right of presiding over the different courts of Inquisition, and gave them the most unlimited powers, as judges delegated by him, and immediately representing his person: they were permitted to excommunicate, or sentence to death whom they thought proper, upon the most slight information of heresy. They were allowed to publish crusades against all whom they deemed heretics, and enter into leagues with sovereign princes, to join their crusades with their forces."

- John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Claxton, 1881, p. 77-78, [University of Virginia]

Where is any of this in the New Testament doctrine of the Lord Jesus Christ? As we've already established in earlier chapters, it's not based on the Bible; the Catholic Church follows their popes and their deceptive traditions.

*(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;)*  
- 2 Corinthians 10:4

*For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.*  
- Ephesians 6:12

*And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate [sinful] mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity [destructive tendencies]; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.*  
- Romans 1:28-32

I have emphasized "inventors of evil things" because we can only begin to imagine the uncountable amount of atrocities committed by the popes and inquisitors in the name of their false Catholic god. Though it is unpleasant to consider, it is important for all who will hear to understand the true face of the papacy; that all this was appointed by the popes of Rome, and hopefully, Catholics will come to understand the true nature of the cult in which they put their faith.

One of the devices used by sadistic Inquisitors was "The Judas Chair," which was a seat designed with a pyramid shape. Prisoners, male or female, would be taken to a room, stripped naked, and lifted by ropes above this pyramid, then slowly lowered down on to the top and made to sit upon it with the tip in their orifices (anus or vagina), slowly stretching and ripping the skin, which would cause an immense amount of pain, while the Inquisitor sits comfortably in his normal chair and waits for the so-called "heretic" to confess his/her allegiance to the Roman Pontiff.
Another device called "The Rack" was designed to slowly stretch out a man or woman's arms and legs to the point that his/her joints would dislocate at the hips and shoulders, which is pain most of us can't imagine. Again, the Catholic Inquisitor would stand beside the device, watching their pain and listening to their screams while calmly waiting to hear a confession of their dedication to the Catholic Church.

The device called "The Skull Crusher" is relatively self-explanatory; the victim's chin was put over the metal bar at the bottom, while the skull cap was placed on top, and a winch was turned so that the skull was slowly crushed by the vice. This is one of the more excruciating devices because the Christian put in this device would have his/her teeth shatter and eyes pop out of their sockets long before their skull shatters enough to cause a loss of consciousness.
Inquisitors also loved to use "The Hand Crusher," which delivered an extraordinary amount of pain without risk of killing their prisoner. As you can see below, the knuckles of the hands were placed under each vice and were slowly crushed, while the victim was forced to stare at a gothic version of the pagan cross symbol of the Catholic Church. (Read "Christian Symbols Are Not Christian" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

For those of us born again in Christ, we need not fear these things because we cannot withstand this torture on our own, but during trials of tribulation and persecution, the Holy Spirit of God will rain down upon us and give us strength to endure. If you read Foxe's Book of Martyrs, you'll find that eyewitnesses reported odd and miraculous things happening upon the torture and execution of Christians, even some instances in which pain was not felt nor would fire burn, and that we should always remember that, though we are undeserving of the least of His mercies, the Lord Jesus Christ will never forsake us because He promised He would be with us.
In God have I put my trust: I will not be afraid what man can do unto me.
-Psalm 56:11

Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee. So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.
-Hebrews 13:5-6

Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.
-Matthew 5:10-12

Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.
-Matthew 10:16-20

For Catholics, these torturous devices are the reality of the religion in which you serve and worship; it is the end result of the absolute power of the Roman Pontiff. Other devices were developed to slowly crush elbows and kneecaps, and some even on a more sexually perverted level, but there is a certain amount I wish not to show here for decency's sake because the Inquisitors also devised methods for keeping someone alive and conscious while tearing the victim's skin clear to the waist, and before you ask whether I mean from the feet up or the head down—both.

Sadly, the typical Catholic buys into the media hype of a public, so-called "apology" made by Pope John Paul II in March of 2000. He did this because in 1998, he decided to open up the secret documents stored in the Vatican library concerning the Inquisition. Let's read what he said, and then I'll show the deception:
"Let us forgive and ask forgiveness! While we praise God who, in his merciful love, has produced in the Church a wonderful harvest of holiness, missionary zeal, total dedication to Christ and neighbour, we cannot fail to recognize the infidelities to the Gospel committed by some of our brethren, especially during the second millennium. Let us ask pardon for the divisions which have occurred among Christians, for the violence some have used in the service of the truth and for the distrustful and hostile attitudes sometimes taken towards the followers of other religions."

What this deceitful viper is doing is shifting the blame; it is NOT "some of our brethren" nor "violence some have used," it is the torture and murder of Christians at the hand and authority of PAPAL ROME, or in other words, the seat of the Pope! John Paul II was not confessing to the error of the office in which he sits, because after all, as we covered in the last chapter, he and his fellow popes are infallible, so instead, he gives an apathetic and vain "apology" on behalf of "some people," rather than confessing the truth in the humility of repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing).
(Read "Is Repentance Part of Salvation?" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.
-Romans 10:10

Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.
-2 Corinthians 7:9-10
Of course, the typical Catholic I've had conversations with will tell me that I'm unmerciful or unforgiving, but Christ told us that we only need to forgive when a man repents in grief and sorrow of his wrongdoing. I would be glad to give my mercy and forgiveness to the popes of Rome if they would come to repentance, but they will not do so because they are sitting on the throne of an antichrist.

*Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.*
-Luke 17:3

However, the deception gets worse, and the so-called "apology" is completely useless because even though most people think the Office of Inquisition was shut down after the Italian armies liberated the people from Vatican rule in the 19th century, the Inquisitors still existed; just undercover. Governments would not allow them to continue their torture and executions openly; if they were done, they had to be done in secret, and we'll see some evidence of that when we get to the next chapter. The 2nd Vatican Council renamed the Office of Inquisition to "The Office of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith" to make it sound more pleasant, since the Office of Inquisition already has a bad name: "By the nineteenth century, most of the gruesome practices had ceased. However, the Office of the Inquisition remained until 1965 when it was reshaped into the Office of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith during the Second Vatican Council."

In fact, Joseph Ratzinger, who would later become Pope Benedict XVI, was appointed the "Grand Inquisitor" for the newly reshaped Office of Inquisition:
"Pope John Paul II and his grand inquisitor Joseph Ratzinger (now Pope Benedict XVI) have renamed the Holy Office as the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith and have revived the antimodernist oath in a new guise."

The Bible tells us that, concerning the wicked hearts of mankind, they will continue the same things they've always done. The phrase "there's nothing new under the sun" comes from Ecclesiastes 1:9, and the Lord God is explaining to us that just as rivers flow into the oceans, water evaporates into clouds, and comes down as rain into the lakes to flow into the rivers again, so is there a large cycle with mankind all throughout history; in short, the Catholic Church tortured and murdered once, and there will come a time in which they will do it again:

*The sun also ariseth, and the sun goeth down, and hasteth to his place where he arose. The wind goeth toward the south, and turneth about unto the north; it whirleth about continually, and the wind returneth again according to his circuits. All the rivers run into the sea; yet the sea is not full; unto the place from whence the rivers come, thither they return again... The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.*
-Ecclesiastes 1:5-9
A Greater Persecution Than The Inquisition Is Coming

For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

-Matthew 24:21

(Read "The Beginner's Guide to Tribulation and Rapture" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The worst persecution and tribulation of the born again Christians is coming in the final days, and it will be more extreme than what we've seen so far. I am convicted to express my grief and disgust with the typical church buildings around just about every corner of America, in which they cannot sanctify themselves from the most simple things in times of peace in which they have a choice, but then proclaim in hypocrisy that when the days come where the devilish Papal entity will be ripping people's guts out, that they will stand with Christ.

(Read "501c3: The Devil's Church" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The Lord Jesus Christ warned us that these men and women, who are lukewarm (while hypocritically claiming that they are not lukewarm), are false converts that have never been born again, but rather, they just play church, and they are the seeds who fell among the stones:

But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

-Matthew 13:20-21

I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

-Revelation 3:15-17

The Word of God is not a game. This is serious, and we ought to take it seriously because for most people in this world, hell and the lake of fire awaits.

(Read "Hell Is Real And Many People Are Going There" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

-Matthew 7:14

In conversations with Catholics I've been called a "Catholic-hater" because I bring up the subject of the Inquisition. This is a quick name-calling (logical fallacy: *ad hominem*) attack that helps them to deter (logical fallacy: *red herring*) the conversation away from the facts. The fact is that most of those who say that to me actually hate me, not the other way around, because they don't want to hear or face the truth, but I love them enough to tell them the truth, and warn them of God's wrath, which will be poured down upon those who will not come to repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing) and faith in the Lord Jesus Christ alone.

The Catholic Inquisition, among many other Catholic atrocities, triggered what is commonly known today as the "Reformation," which was a large number of people in Europe who began to pull away from the Catholic Church and study the Bible for themselves. Martin Luther, one of the most well-known preachers of the Reformation, who lived through the horrors of the Catholic Inquisition, said:

"We here are of the conviction that the papacy is the seat of the true and real Antichrist... personally I declare that I owe the Pope no other obedience than that to Antichrist."

"I am persuaded that if at this time, St. Peter, in person, should preach all the articles of Holy Scripture, and only deny the pope's authority, power, and primacy, and say, that the pope is not the head of all Christendom, they would cause him to be hanged. Yea, if Christ himself were again on earth, and should preach, without all doubt the pope would crucify him again. Therefore let us expect the same treatment; but better is it to build upon Christ, than upon the pope."

-Martin Luther, quoted in The Table Talk of Martin Luther, William Hazlitt, Vol. 127, p. 234, [New York Public Library]

There was a time in medieval (i.e. during the Middle Ages) Europe that is known as "The Dark Ages," which was a time of grief, suffering, disease, and death. What historians typically don't understand is that the Dark Ages were caused by the Catholic Church, specifically from their efforts to prevent the common people from reading the Word of God for themselves.

Many people don't know that, at one point, the Catholic Inquisitors BANNED the Bible, meaning it was forbidden to own a copy or study it on pain of death (even though they say "pain of excommunication," but we know better). This information was discovered not by Christians, but by Catholic librarians and historians after Pope John Paul II began his investigation into the Inquisition secret files back in 1998:

"The Vatican permitted scrutiny of one of the most notorious periods in Roman Catholic Church history yesterday when it opened the archives of the department once known as the Inquisition... Opened on Thursday alongside the Inquisition archives was the infamous Index of Forbidden Books, which Roman Catholics were forbidden to read or possess on pain of excommunication. They showed that even the Bible was once on the blacklist. Translations of the Holy Book ended up on the bonfires along with other 'heretical' works because the Church, whose official language was Latin, was suspicious of allowing the faithful access to sacred texts without ecclesiastical guidance."


This ban and burning of Bibles by the Catholic Church was done very early on by the Inquisitors, as early as 1244, which was just a few years after the Office of Inquisition was created:

"In 1244, their power was farther increased by the emperor Frederic the Second, who declared himself the protector and friend of all the inquisitors, and published the cruel edicts, viz. 1. That all heretics who continued obstinate, should be burnt. 2. That all heretics who repented, should be imprisoned for life... The principal accusation against those who are subject to this tribunal is heresy, which comprises all that is spoken, or written, against any of the articles of the creed, or the traditions of the Roman church. The inquisition likewise takes cognizance of such as are accused of being magicians, and of such who read the bible in the common language."

-John Foxe, Foxe's Book of Martyrs, Claxton, 1881, p. 78, [University of Virginia]
This is not talked about much in history classes in public schools and colleges, but the fact is that the Catholic Church has, for a long time, discouraged people from studying the Word of God. In fact, Mary Tudor, Queen of England (1553-1558), who was a dedicated follower of the Catholic Church, earned the nickname "Bloody Mary" because of her vicious persecution against Christians; as soon as she took the throne and established the Pope's ruling authority in England, she prohibited the printing of the Bible by law and all Bibles were removed from churches across the country. (Which is another great argument for home churches just like in the book of Acts because it's impossible for a government to monitor every home.)


However, Christians will ignore any government law that prevents them from studying the Word of God because we are commanded by God to do so:

*Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*

-2 Timothy 2:15

(Read "False Doctrine: Unlimited Submission to Government" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Many other famous reformers understood the heresies of Rome. John Calvin wrote:

"Some persons think us too severe and censorious when we call the Roman pontiff Antichrist. But those who are of this opinion do not consider that they bring the same charge of presumption against Paul himself, after whom we speak and whose language we adopt... I shall briefly show that they [Paul's words in II Thess. 2] are not capable of any other interpretation than that which applies them to the Papacy."


*Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.*

-2 Thessalonians 2:3-4

John Knox said the same thing about the papacy when he wrote about "that tyranny which the pope himself has for so many ages exercised over the church." He was firmly convinced that the Pope of Rome is "the very antichrist, and son of perdition, of whom Paul speaks," which again is from 2 Thessalonian 2, but it should be noted that the Bible says there would be many antichrists before the final one in 1 John 2:18.

(See John Knox, quoted by John Hunter & Hastings Robinson, The Zurich Letters, University Press, 1842, p. 199)

*Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.*

-1 John 2:18

Even before the Catholic Church was formed, there were many antichrists roaming around. This is why I say that the throne of the Roman Pontiff is the seat of the son of perdition, but the individual popes we've seen so far are not the son of perdition himself (I would say rather that the evil spirit of the son of perdition hangs over them); they are numbered among the many antichrists before the final antichrist appears, but the persecution and tribulation coming from the Catholic Church was so great, the reformers were convinced that the current pope of their day was the son of perdition prophesied in 2 Thessalonians 2.
Thomas Cranmer wrote:
"Whereof it followeth Rome to be the seat of antichrist, and the pope to be very antichrist himself: I could prove the same by many other scriptures, old writers, and strong reasons."

The doctrine of the Bible, which points to the seat of the Pope being the throne of antichrist, began to spread far and wide, and since the Catholic Church was no longer able to stop it, the Jesuit Priest Manel De Lacuna, with the help of some of his Jesuit brethren, wrote *La Venida Del Mes'as en Gloria y Magestad* (i.e. *The Coming of the Messiah in Glory and Majesty*) in the 18th century, under the pseudonym (fake name) "Rabbi" Juan Josafat Ben-Ezra in order to fake some Jewish heritage. The book's purpose was to change some of the prophecies and timelines of Revelation, so that the Jesuits could protect the Roman Pontiff from being seen as antichrist, and in the 19th century, Edward Irving translated Lacunza's book into English, taking his doctrines and applying them to the Charismatic movement, and that's where the "Pre-Tribulation" false prophecy was born. (That's why you don't see "pre-trib" doctrine taught anywhere in history before the 19th century.) In summary, the false pre-trib doctrine we see in church buildings all over the world today was a Jesuit farce that was created to counter the mass exodus of the Reformation. (Read "The Beginner's Guide to Tribulation & Rapture" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

We will pick up more on this topic when we get to Chapter 11, but for now, let's switch gears and take a closer look at nuns; the poor souls of women who are, in this author's opinion, more used and abused than anyone else in the Catholic system.

#9 – Nuns: The Brides of Satan

There are many people, especially Catholics, who will be offended by the title of this chapter, but keep in mind that this is not something I write or say lightly. Though nuns are typically called the "brides of Christ" by the Catholic Church, they are actually marrying themselves to the Devil and his doctrines.

**nun** (n): a woman member of a religious order, especially one bound by vows of poverty, chastity, and obedience

**convent** (n): a community of persons devoted to religious life under a superior; a society of nuns


Nuns go through an actual marriage ceremony upon their initiation into the Catholic convents; being taught to believe they are marrying themselves to Christ. When you see a nun with a white veil, that means she's an initiate, and that white veil represents a wedding dress (i.e. they believe they are marrying Christ himself in spirit and in flesh), but if you see a nun with a black veil, she has taken vows of poverty and chastity in which she forswea...
In Scripture, the bride of Christ is the church, just as the body of Christ is those Christians that make up the church. These verses are not referring to individual women.

Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; -Ephesians 5:25

For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. 
-1 Corinthians 12:12

So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. 
-Romans 12:5

Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God. 
-Romans 7:4

The marriage that is being spoken of here is not virgin girls being married to Christ directly, but the church, the body of Christ, being married to Him in spirit as a whole; again, NOT individuals through a physical marriage ceremony. The entire concept of virgin nuns marrying Christ is an invention of the Catholic Church, and is not supported anywhere in the Word of God.

In the New Testament, there are three institutions the Lord God established for Christ’s church specifically: One is government (i.e. the state, for the punishment of evildoers), one is marriage, and the other is the church itself, which is the body of believers (i.e. not a physical building - 1Co 6:19). You will find no Scripture whatsoever in the Bible where God instituted "nuns" or "convents."

Those who have grown up in the Catholic Church will understand that the general doctrine taught in Catholicism is that "grace" is only a help to introduce one "into the intimacy of the Trinitarian life." What this means is that Catholics are taught that they must work to ADD to the finished work of the Lord Jesus Christ (John 19:30), and one of the ways women are taught to do this in the Catholic Church is by becoming a nun; suffering her whole life both for her own soul, and for those in purgatory.
(See Catechism of the Catholic Church, Part 3, Section 1, Chapter 3, Article 2, "Grace and Justification," Canon #1997, retrieved July 25, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p3s1c3a2.htm])

Because the Catholic Church has spent many centuries building a reputation for nuns, I will often be branded as an evil man for daring to expose the Catholic convents, but the fact is that nothing they are doing is of Christ, and just like most of those in the Catholic Church, nuns will have their part in the lake of fire if they do not come to repentance and faith in Christ alone. Therefore, I say these things for their sakes as much as everyone else reading this. If those of you who are skeptical would be willing to read this chapter, you will learn the truth of what goes on behind closed doors in these convents, and what many women have had to suffer under the guise of being "a bride of Christ."

In chapter 2, we looked closely at the pagan concept of Purgatory, which I pointed out is the bread-and-butter (i.e. the primary money-maker) of the Catholic Church, but without the nuns, the false doctrine of Purgatory would not make the Catholic Church near as much money. The nuns are, for the most part, the backbone of the Catholic Church because without nuns, the world would not be so willing to believe the lie that the Catholic Church is "good."
Hospitals, orphanages, nursing homes, soup kitchens—you won't often see the Catholic priests, bishops, and popes doing this work; it is the nuns who break their backs to do charitable works, and the nuns are the ones who do all the evangelistic outreach for the papacy. Sadly, though some may have pure intentions, none of those charitable works glorify the Lord Jesus Christ, but rather, the entire institution is designed to give the Catholic Church a good name so they can continue to deceive the masses with lies that will lead them to the wide gates of destruction.

Since the Catholic institution of nunnery is mostly female, I think it's best I let former nuns speak for themselves. It should be noted that mainstream Catholic sources, such as *Catholic Answers*, write off these testimonies as "propaganda," pointing to past publications which may indeed have been fraudulent (i.e. I would not argue that there have never been fraudulent claims made against the Catholic Church), but they teach Catholics to believe that EVERY testimony that comes out of the convents is just made up, and not only is that false, unreasonable conjecture (i.e. a guess that's not based on any facts, which is based on blind faith in Catholicism), it's also the typical attitude I witness in Catholics when I tell them about these testimonies.


Let's start with former nun Lolly Harding, who was a medical nun working in a Catholic mission for thirteen years, helping Muslim women. Muslim women often cannot get medical treatment because according to the ridiculous tenets of their pagan religion, men are not allowed to touch any woman that is not his wife, even if her life is on the line. (Read "Islam: Religion of Terror" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Harding testified that she eventually left the mission and the nuns due to the terrible conditions and lack of love among nuns in general. As I've already stated, it is common that people view nuns as the most merciful and kindest people in the world, but the truth is far less fanciful. Don't misunderstand; I'm not saying that there are not kind or merciful nuns, but there is an outward appearance with an inward corruption to all institutions of the Catholic Church.

*Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.*
- John 7:24

*Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.*
- Matthew 23:26

Harding also testified that while she was stationed as a nun in Pakistan, one of the nun surgeons, who they called "Sister Barbara," worked herself to rigidly for many years, and she was a skilled surgeon. (Harding had testified that she had done a skin graft for a Muslim woman who had her face torn apart by a bear, and had restored most of her face for her.) Barbara ended up taking the drug Demerol to help keep her going (i.e. she would have the younger nun nurses bring it to her for a "patient," but then take it herself), which is sorcery by definition (i.e. sorcery comes from word "pharmakia," which is where we get the word "pharmaceutical"), and the nun got so addicted to it, she ended up living the rest of her days in a state of mind-numbing addiction, being unable to function normally, and she was "left to wander about the hospital grounds and was neither given treatment nor sent away from the source of drugs, but simply forgotten."

Psychotropic Drugs Are Not Uncommon Among Nuns

I've read and listened to numerous testimonies from Christian women who were former nuns. (i.e. They born again out of the Catholic Church.) Many of them testified that nuns were commonly taking psychotropic drugs, which are drugs that affect the mind, emotions, and other basic behaviors.

Often, these women testified that nuns were taking Valium or Xanax to calm their anxiety because of the harsh, unbiblical living conditions and work load they suffered on a daily basis. Taking these drugs makes people feel drunk, have lack of coordination (which is dangerous in some situations, like those in the medical field), and they can cause extreme irritation, dry mouth, fever, difficulty breathing, heart palpitations, slurred speech, stomach cramps, delayed reflexes, depression, nausea, seizures, bladder control problems, blurred vision, dementia, and worst of all, addiction.

(See Patrick Condro, "The Effects of Valium Use," DrugAbuse.com, retrieved July 26, 2018, [drugabuse.com/library/the-effects-of-valium-use])

Obviously, these drugs can kill people, and have killed people, but the Catholic Church allows these women to destroy themselves on these drugs, so long as they continue to put their faith in the "holy mother church."

Harding could no longer tolerate that kind of lifestyle, and although she tried to go back to cloistered life in Kokomo, Indiana, she eventually requested to be released from her vows as a nun and joined the military as a nurse. Although she generally stuck to her Catholic roots, as most people who are starved of any pleasure and were under a bond of chains for much of their lives, Harding turned to drunkenness, fornication, and covetousness, and she was able to easily become addicted to those things, looking for any kind of worldly solace during the Vietnam War.

A few years later, Harding's brother showed up to a family reunion, being newly saved, and he picked up his King James Bible and told his family they "were all headed for hell" because the Bible clearly states, as we covered in earlier chapters, that there is only one mediator between God and men, and that is Jesus Christ.

(Read "Why I Use The King James Bible" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;
-1 Timothy 2:3-5

Though Harding resisted at first, eventually, through study and conversation with her brother, the Lord God gave her a heart of repentance, and she was born again in the Lord Jesus Christ. She says to all Catholics:
"I beg you to do as I did. Come to Jesus Christ as a lost soul and trust His blood atonement at Calvary to pay for your sins. He took your place on the Cross to pay for the sins of the whole world. Receive this gift of eternal life from Him by your acceptance of His complete payment of your sin by His death, burial and resurrection. The Catholic Church has deprived you of the simple plan of salvation and has substituted a tortuous plan of works. There is no need for the pagan sacrifice you make at Mass or the futile confessing of sins to a priest. Jesus Christ awaits you."

I also listened to a live interview with Lolly Harding, in which she testified that the young women who enter these convents are brainwashed into the belief that the sister superior (i.e. the nun who rules over the convent) is equivalent to the Word/Will of God:
"She [the sister superior] represents God's will... they have to accept you into the order, and you are thoroughly brainwashed into the idea that you are doing God's will, and that the superior represents will of God for you... during that whole period time [initiate training]there is a very strict regimentation of—they have strict rules and regulations that go back into the 14th/15th century."
Part of those rules are those of penance, in which nuns (and priests) are trained to physically beat and whip themselves, to torture themselves, for those who are suffering in purgatory:

"We thought that we had to do penance to save the world. We were mistaken. We did not have the truth—we did not have the truth as it is in the King James Bible. We had this idea that we had to save the world by our penitential life, and by living this strict life, isolating yourself, pray—get up at 5:30 in the morning, and I remember flagellating [whipping]. I remember this mother superior, and she really flagellated herself; I could hear her whipping herself. They were very devout, misinformed, ignorant, beautiful creatures... and this is tragedy of this whole thing. We thought we were doing something right for the world, and we were going to help sinners get to heaven by our life of penance."


Again, this is not based on Biblical instruction or institution; all of the nun regulations and rules are based on the made-up traditions of the Catholic Church in respect to their doctrine of purgatory, which has no Scriptural or factual basis whatsoever. Some of these rules about beating and whipping oneself were changed a few decades ago in the United States (as we'll see in another testimony later), but this has been normal operating procedure for the Catholic convents and parishes for many centuries, and there are many countries who still practice the Catholic self-flagellating ordinance.

Rita Riel entered a Catholic boarding school in Massachusetts; specifically a section divided for "juvenists," which were girls who were training to be nuns. Being there only a two weeks, she knew she wanted to leave and return to her father's home because it was a secluded life of being little seen, never heard, and living in constant fear. Riel wrote home to her parents to let them know she no longer wanted to attend, but three days later, the head mistress walked in with her letter, unsealed, in hand, pressuring this young girl to stay, and later, even threatened her by saying that if she left and did not become a nun, God would curse her and punish all her children if she ever got married.


Riel stayed in the convent and became a nun in fear of the threat the mistress had made to her, fearing that God would curse her children if she didn't stay at the convent. She wanted to become a teacher, and studied to be able to do so, but the convent deceived her because they had her become a nun instead of finish high school, so she wasn't allowed to be a teacher.


Through a series of circumstances, all guided by the Lord God, she was later given the opportunity to replace a nun teacher who had fallen ill with cancer, and she started out being given a classroom of 47 second-graders. From there, she not only was able to go on to attend universities to learn more about teaching, but more importantly, she began to study the Bible for herself, learning that all have sinned and come short of the glory of God (Rom 3:23), that she needed to repent, and believe on the Lord Jesus Christ alone, in His grace alone, for her salvation; eventually, she was able to understand enough about the Bible to know that she did not need to be a nun to please the Lord.

(Read "The Cure For Cancer" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Mary Hertel grew up in a highly strict Catholic family who were completely dedicated to the daily rituals of the Catholic Church. The Eucharist, Mass, rosaries, novenas (a series of special prayers for nine days), "and other special devotions to Mary, the Sacred Heart, the Infant of Prague, St. Joseph, St. Anthony, St. Christopher and others were rituals of our daily life." Hertel's family gave the utmost honor and respect unto those who dedicated their lives to the Catholic Church, and thus, Hertel made the decision to become a nun after high school in order to please her family, and, as she thought at the time, to please God.

“This decision to become a religious [nun] was supported especially by my mother. It was a matter of pride and honor for the family. At the time I entered in 1963, the rule was that I would never return home. As a postulant [nunnery candidate], communication with family was monitored (letters written home and received from home were read) and strict rules were in place for the years of training. After the first year, a bridal ceremony followed by the cutting of my hair and dressing in full restrictive habit [nun garment] ushered me into the Novitiate [house for nun novices]. I was now Sister Mary Dolora."


Hertel testifies that she was required to fall on her knees and do penance (i.e. voluntary self-punishment for sin) for ridiculous things; for example, she was required to do penance for simply speaking with an elderly nun while she cared for the old woman during infirmary duty. (i.e. Absolute silence is required in the convents.) Thankfully, the year before she was required to do self-flagellation (i.e. whipping oneself), changes were made in the Catholic Church to discontinue that practice in the convents, and the ban on visiting home was lifted; however, many elder nuns and priests attempted to keep some of the more strict rules, even denying Hertel the permission to help certain injured and lame people on the basis of keeping the nuns in line.

Hertel also testifies that her convent was given a task to design a less-restrictive habit (i.e. garment) for the nuns to wear. Why they had them do this was also never explained to them, and she was quite surprised because such things had been done for many centuries in the Catholic Church. (The elder nuns and priests didn't like this change either.) (See Mary Hertel, “The Grace of God Brought a Nun to the True Jesus Christ,” Dave Flang, May 5, 2012, retrieved July 25, 2018, [youtu.be/NrJSUlxNE0?t=8m40s])

It should be noted there is no solid explanation given by the Catholic Church as to why they eased up on the rules (Hertel also testified that no explanation was ever given to or made by any superiors), but it leaves us curious for a reason because those rules had been established by popes and bishops (which are supposed to be absolute, unchangeable divine laws), and were practiced for centuries, so why the sudden change? Hertel even confesses that the nuns and priests in her convent were very confused by all these changes, but I believe I can offer a reasonable explanation for it.

The fact is that this was all taking place in the 1960s, during a time of rebellion and social change in the United States, and so this was a political movement specifically for American convents to keep people from exposing the Catholic Church, or in other words, if the Catholic Church hadn't relaxed their grip, the massive exodus of those leaving the convents and parishes that took place in the 1970s would have been much more severe, especially with the growing feminist movement. As we have already established, the Catholic Church doesn't make decisions based on what God says, but as every other cult in existence, they make decisions based on the political winds of change.

(Read "Feminism: Satan's Plan to Destroy Your Family“ or get Chris Johnson's book "Feminism: Castrating America" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;*

*Ephesians 4:14*
In addition, Hertel testified that there was a lot of lewdness and sexual interaction that went on between priests and nuns in the convents and parishes that was kept private, away from public knowledge:

“When you’re dealing with chastity in a false system that has been set up and made by man, the infractions [violation of rules] are going to come in. In my own experience, as being a nun, my first assignment, which I left after that assignment, but in that assignment there were parties that were given by the priest. The priests had freedom, and they had money, and they had parties where there was drinking and there was dancing and there was inappropriate interaction between the nuns and the priests. So that was my personal experience in the convent that really disturbed me because it certainly was against the rules, but it was also something that was kind of known that was going on here and there. But then when I got out of the convent in my job that I took in Chicago, I was teaching with another woman, a lay woman, who, after a period of time, had a very long stretch of depression. She locked herself in her apartment, and wasn't answering phone calls or her door, and I found out she had been having a very lengthy affair with a priest; the same priest that was coming into our classrooms and teaching religion to our elementary students. She was devastated. This was just cut off. It's as if there was no consequences on the side of the priest that had been involved with her; at least, we didn’t see them externally, but for my friend, there were devastating consequences."


This should be no surprise since this was always a common practice among priests in the Catholic Church. For many hundreds of years, priests were allowed to keep concubines (i.e. whores), to use and throw away at will, and walked around with them in open, unashamed fornication, as we’ll see in the testimony of one of the Christian martyrs in Chapter 11.

Hertel left the convent after six years being a nun, and remained a Catholic for another 18 years before she was born again in the Lord Jesus Christ. During a series of major life changes, including job changes, children, and family deaths, the Catholic Church made a mistake: They gave Hertel and her husband (Bernie) a Bible. Granted, it was a Catholic version with many perversions in it, but there was enough of the Gospel still in it that eventually led the couple to seek out born again Christians and the King James Bible, which they began to study on a regular basis. By 1990, Hertel and her husband came to repentance and had been born again in the Lord Jesus Christ, departing forever from convents, parishes, and the corrupt, pagan, and restraining rituals of the Catholic Church.

I repeat, there is NO Biblical mandate that commands or allows the institution of a convent and nunnery. All the traditions they practice within those places are based solely on the Catholic tradition of men; they are not based on the Word of the Living God.

Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

-Galatians 5:1

Mary Pakiz converted to Catholicism in 1948 at the age of eighteen:

"Rather than searching the Scriptures for truth to find out if Catholic teaching was in line with God’s Word, I blindly accepted everything the priest told me during my instructions to become a Catholic, except for one request. He asked me to bring my King James version of the Bible to the rectory. He said it had to be burned because it was not the official Catholic version. Instead, I gave it to my mother."

Pakiz goes on to describe that great emphasis was put on the Catholic Pope being the infallible authority on earth, that he was never to be questioned, and by 1950, she followed that authority into the Order of St. Benedict as a nun, being influenced by other nuns that worked in the same hospital as she did. Pakiz's testimony is a bit different because she was very happy her first year in the convent, having a head mistress that was kind and gentle, but she confessed that she "knew little about Him [Jesus Christ] other than He was the Son of God."

During Pakiz's training to be a nun, they did not study the doctrines of Christ:

"During the five year preparation period for our final vows, we studied the Rule of Saint Benedict, canon law, church history, a bit about Jesuit causistry (the end justifies the means), and the lives of the saints."


The "end justifies the means" is an unbiblical doctrine which teaches that it doesn't matter what you do, so long as you do it for the "right" reasons. The Jesuits have certainly practiced that dogma, through deception and murder, all in the name of the Catholic Church and the Pope of Rome.

Thankfully, the Lord God gave Pakiz some health problems five months before she took her vows as a nun, and she left the convent, but still remained in her Catholic religion. Many years later, after getting married and having two children, the children were invited to attend a backyard Bible study, to which Pakiz's priest oddly gave no objection for them to attend. (i.e. The Lord God's hand was behind it.) It was through the memorization of Scripture by her children that Pakiz learned she was a sinner that was guilty before God, and that she had to come to repentance of her sin, and to have faith in the grace of Christ alone.

There is an important common factor I keep seeing in these wonderful testimonies from former nuns: They had to come to repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow) of their sins. The Catholic Church taught them in the convents that they were the "holy" brides of Christ, who were to suffer for their own sins and the sins of the world, and that leaves a mindset that the nuns are inwardly "good."

As it is written, *There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.*

-Romans 3:10-12

The Bible does not say there is a nun righteous.
The Bible says there is *NONE* righteous.

Another common factor in all these testimonies is that these women thought they would be found righteous before God through their works as a nun; meaning they thought being a nun would help gain them and their families entrance to heaven, and the Catholic Church has used and abused them without remorse. In essence, these women are taught to put nunnery in the place of Christ for their salvation.
For example, Jo Kaminski was baptized into the Catholic Church at age 19, and sought to become a nun:

"Because of all these things, I seriously considered becoming a nun to save my soul and to serve God, Whom I thirsted after and longed to please in spite of discomfort in His company. I thought if I were a sister, God would give me a little more consideration at judgment. Nuns are called 'spiritual brides' of Christ. That sounded pretty safe to me."


The Lord God was slowly convicting her to come out and trust in Him alone, and Kaminski finally decided to back away from the Catholic Church, for which the Catholic Church labeled her an excommunicated heretic. Four years later, she was personally convicted to start studying the Bible, and was invited to a Bible study group by a Christian friend, and she finally learned the truth about Christ through the Word of God, that Jesus is the rock upon which the church is built, not Peter, and she believed on Christ's grace alone for her salvation.

---

**No Bible Study For Nuns**

As we've already read in previous chapters, the priests and bishops of the Catholic Church discourage studying the Bible because they know that understanding the doctrines of Christ ends up leading people away from the Catholic Church. It is for the sake of those who are oppressed by wicked men that God promised He would preserve His Word for us:

*For the oppression of the poor, for the sighing of the needy, now will I arise, saith the LORD; I will set him in safety from him that puffeth at him. The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever.*

Psalms 12:5-7

But knowing the wickedness of Catholicism, in nearly all cases, nuns do not (are not taught to) study the Bible either. There is this unspoken presupposition that if a woman wears the garb of a nun, she understands Scripture, but this is not the case. Many of the testimonies I've read from former Catholics demonstrate another common theme that, though they may have quoted some Bible verses in their prayers, they didn't understand those verses and they never studied the Word of God; rather, they studied the words of pagan philosophers, Catholic canon, and quotes from famous Catholics throughout the centuries.

As aforementioned former medical nun Lolly Harding put it:

"As a Catholic [nun], you are not allowed to read anything contrary to the Catholic history, or Catholic doctrine, and you are not allowed to openly criticize anything you see that's obviously bad... we were thoroughly—THOROUGHLY imbued with this idea they have all the truth, and you are submitted to them in this blind obedience, and it's a sin if you listen to anything else."


The aforementioned former nun Mary Hertel said:

"A lot of people find this hard to believe, but I never saw a Bible in the convent. I never read the Bible. There were Scriptures that are incorporated in the mass, of course, and in prayers and prayer books that we used, but I never studied the Bible, and I didn't even know where the books of the Bible were. They were announced as the readings were done, but I really did not know the Word of God."

Again, to quote former 23-year-veteran Catholic priest Richard Bennett, which I had quoted in the introduction to this book:

"I also had bought, before I went into the monastery, a Bible. I thought we were going to study the Bible. I spent three pounds sterling buying a Bible, and I thought this is where we were really going to spend our time. I found that the first year was all rituals, devotions... we did all these religious exercises, but we didn't study Scripture. And then, we did start to study intently every day in the second year, but it was the philosophy of Aristotle, a pagan 300 years before Christ. To this day, priests are still trained in the philosophy of Greece. And then, we studied all the philosophies of the world. Then we started, after that, four years of theology of the famous Thomas Aquinas. We did study the introduction to some of the books of the Bible, but always under the authority of the [Catholic] Church. So it was not anything to do with the Word; it was to do with Catholicism."


Try and remember this if any of you who are born again in Christ meet some nuns (or even priests for that matter); don't let their outward appearance intimidate you because these people do not understand the Word of God. Commit verses like Rom 3:10-12 and 1Ti 2:5 to memory, and even in passing, even if they won't hear you initially, quote these verses to them because one day, many years from now, the Lord God may have those men and women recall those verses and seek the truth, so that they too would be saved by Christ on the day of God's Judgment.

Doreen Eberhardt, a nun who was eventually led by the Lord God out of the convent and into the truth of Christ, testified of the truth behind the closed doors of the convent:

"You are not allowed to tell your family or friends what really happens inside the convent, [i.e. As we've already seen from other testimonies, they monitor all communication going in and out.] Everything was to be presented as a rosy picture, and all suffering, pain, illnesses and unhappiness kept inside yourself. You are robotized to think, act, talk and do the same thing, all at the same time. It is the aspect of fear that keeps girls in the convent, fear of leaving the 'one true Church', as the Catholics like to say, and possibly risking your chance to get to heaven. You are never taught to ask Christ for help or to give thanks to Him. It is always pray to Mary, Joseph, or some other 'Saint' such as Anthony, Jude, etc."


I should note that the concept of praying to "saints" or other such people is taken directly from witches and mystics. Without going into great detail, they teach that you should visualize a particular person in your mind and pray to them, which is ultimately praying unto devils because these men and women hear no prayers.

(Read "The Biblical Understanding of Prayer" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

_Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious._

-Acts 17:22

Eberhardt continues to give details about Catholic superstitions performed in the convent:

"There is much superstition found in the convent. For example, they would place a statue of St. Joseph on the window ledge so that it would not rain, but it still rained. They kept a statue of Mary on the dishwasher so that it would continue to work, but it still broke down... In January of 1972, I began to come to an awakening of the truth... God showed me that I should leave [the convent]... When I told my superior of my decision, I was told that I was emotionally upset and not to make such a serious decision for at least another three or four months. I was told that my parents would no longer love me if I left, and that I would not command respect if I did not wear the habit [outfit] of the sisters."

These nuns are lied to in order to get them to stay; they are trying to keep nuns in because when one leaves, it makes it very difficult to keep others in. Thus, they lie not only to those who leave, but it stands to reason that they lie to the others about why she left. (e.g. "She departed from the faith," "she sinned," etc.) They also stressed on her the sin of respecting persons; meaning that she ought to want to desire to have her person respected because of what she was wearing. (Read "God Does Not Justify Lies” & "Respecting Persons is Sin" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

For other nuns, the situation is more extreme. Eileen Doran had experienced sexual advances from priests during her tenure as a nun:

"At one point, I was asked by a priest stationed at the high school to team-teach a drug curriculum with him. We became friendly, but I was totally unprepared for his leading into a more than friendship status. After dinner together in a restaurant one evening, he took me to his rectory room [his room in the house for clergy] and locked the door. It became clear he wanted something more than friendship. [Doran does not indicate if the priest went through with the act.] I sought a transfer to another school, but he continued to be in touch. After his proposal of marriage during my first year in the new position [which nuns and priests are not supposed to do], I began to entertain thoughts of leaving the convent. A short time later, he received permission for further study and changed his proposal to a desire for a special relationship within the confines of the religious life style, [i.e. fornication, or as the world calls it, 'friends with benefits'] Soon after that experience, I was working as director of a retreat. I encountered more than friendly remarks from another priest who was doing the preaching at the retreat."


The unbiblical pressure the Catholic Church puts on priests and nuns, forbidding them to marry, is what drives them into sin. The Bible does not say that we are to forbid marriage, and warns us about people who would teach such heresies.

-Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats [e.g. the Catholic doctrine of no meat on Fridays], which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

-1 Timothy 4:1-3

Sexual abuse of nuns in convents is no isolated incident here or there; it is a problem throughout the world, and most all nuns either have experienced it themselves, or know of another nun who has. As I did research on this subject, I found that these things have been reported by national news services, but often, they get quickly buried.

For example, a national survey conducted by researchers at St. Louis University in 1996, which was partially paid for by active orders of nuns in the Catholic Church (they had to have help from other sources since they don't have much), showed that in the United States alone, approximately 40% of nuns suffered some form of sexual trauma. Obviously, the Catholic Church will not pay for this research because it makes them look bad, and they don't want people to know the truth; it was a group of nuns, alongside other Americans, who wanted to know the truth because so many nuns are suffering anger, shame, depression, fear, and some have even attempted suicide.


According to the St. Louis-Dispatch article:

- Almost 20% (1 out of 5) of nuns said they had been sexually abused as a child before they became nuns; although most from family members, almost 10% were by priests.
- Almost 13% (1 out of 8) had been sexually exploited, meaning that they were given food or other basic needs in exchange for sex.
- Almost 75% (3 out of 4) had been sexually victimized by a priest or another nun, which included everything from so-called 'dates' to sexual intercourse; 40% said their victimization involved some form of genital contact.
- The researchers of the study noted that they underestimated the figures, rather than overestimate them; meaning that the numbers are likely higher than this.
"Findings of the study were published in two religious research journals in the spring and winter of 1998 but have never been reported by the mainstream press."

At first, individual reporters from Catholic News and ABC News published these findings in articles, but they were soon removed, and I was unable to find them. However, I did go to Internet Archive's "Wayback Machine," which documents old internet sites, even if they get taken down, and indeed these sources did report on these things, even Courier-Mail and the Seattle Times published the findings, but again, they were soon removed. (See Catholic News, "Nuns As Sexual Victims Get Little Notice," Internet Archives Wayback Machine, retrieved July 20, 2018, [web.archive.org/web/20030120055743/http://www.cathnews.com/news/301/20.php])

The aforementioned former nun Mary Pakiz goes on to testify that when she was in the convent, there was a warning by the head mistress about the potential sexual abuse that could take place if any of the women were alone with a priest: "There was a warning, and I'm very thankful that our novice mistress was honest enough to tell us that we had to be very careful. [During the year] when we were more or less cloistered, she told us that pretty soon we would be exchanging our white veil for the black veil, and we would be going out into the community, and she said, 'There's one thing I want all of you to remember. And that thing is: You must travel in pairs, and you must never go to a priest's rectory [house for priests] by yourself. If you do, he going to ask you to—or, he is going to take you to bed with him.' I was very thankful that she had told us that, and she also mentioned the two parishes [place where priest has administrative authority] where we had to be very careful, and I was familiar with those two parishes, and I just couldn't comprehend how these older men would be preying upon young women who were aspiring to be nuns. I feel very strongly about this. I feel that those priests took away something that they had no right to take away. They took away the virginity of young women. Now these women, who were espousing to be mystically united with Christ, were also supposed to be virgins; that they gave up their—you might say marriage rights—to serve Christ. The priest then, in taking them to bed with him, violated their virginity. He had absolutely no right to do that. To think that someone from the [Catholic] church would violate these young women. Now some of these young women did not stay in the convent; they moved on and left the convent and got married, and the husband got damaged merchandise, merchandise that had been damaged by a priest, maybe even the priest that married the two. I feel that this is something which has to be addressed. I think we've touched only the tip of the iceberg in regard to the sexual abuse which is in the convent. A lot of the sexual abuse committed by priests has come out, but there still is much more to come out. I think that even though the novice mistress told us to be careful about these certain priests she knew that this existed. My question is: Why then? If the [Catholic] church knew these men were doing this, why did they allow these young women to be put into harm's way?"

Pakiz goes on to testify that when the head mistress warned these young ladies of what the priests may attempt to do to them sexually, cautioning them that they could be raped, the girls just giggled because "they thought that this was silly." They trusted in what they had been told about priests, trusting in the outward appearance of the priests, rather than heeding the warning, and that, eventually, from a statistical standpoint, most of them fell prey to the sexual abuse they once laughed at.

Let's continue to read Pakiz's testimony because even though she put up a wall of protection against the priests, heeding the warning of her superior, she was not warned of the danger of sexual abuse from other nuns within the convent: "I even experienced a lesbian sister trying to seduce me, which I found to be extremely repulsive. It was such that she was a sister superior, and she was built like a gorilla, so there wasn't too much chance to escape her clutches, but it turned out that one day she had me in her office, and she was trying to seduce me through her conversation, and I resisted her, and then finally knocked at the door and I was able to escape down the hall. Then, shortly after that, she decided to take away the keys to our rooms. There were four of us young sisters, and she took away the keys, so we could not lock our rooms at night. I remember waking up one night, and finding this figure clad in a white night gown on the end of my bed talking to me, and using seductive language. I froze. I really had difficulty—I just didn't know what was going to happen, but nothing did happen. But then she returned, night after night, hoping to be able to seduce me through conversation. Consequently, because she would not return my key, I began to develop chest pains, and I'm sure they were a result of anxiety. This anxiety was mimicking a heart attack, so I had to go to the hospital, and the convent doctor was very knowledgeable, and he recognized that there was something really troubling me. When I told him about this, I said that I had asked the sister superior if I could go to the Mother House, I wanted to talk to the Reverend Mother. I wanted to leave the convent, and the sister superior, the one who would come into the bedroom at night, refused. She said, 'No, you may..."
not go and see the Reverend Mother, I forbid it.’ So I mentioned this to the doctor, and the doctor said, 'Don't worry, I'm going to find a way for you to escape. I'm going to find friends who are going to supply the getaway car. I'm also going to provide you with a very small suitcase; pack just a few things that would take care of you maybe for an overnight stay at a villa.' I don't know how exactly the escape plan was done. All I know is one day, somehow, the sister superior was not at the convent, and someone came to tell me that there was somebody waiting outside of the convent for me, and I went, and I was able to get to the Mother House."


Over the course of time, Pakiz managed to get away from nunnery altogether, but soon after leaving the convent, she told this story to a local priest, who in turn went to her convent and contacted the Reverend Mother about it. The Reverend Mother then contacted Pakiz and threatened her, saying, "You are to tell NO ONE about what happened to you in the convent, OR ELSE!" Pakiz did keep quiet about this for a time out of fear, but as some news articles began to come out with those studies about the frequency of sexual abuse among the convents, she thought it was time to come out with her own testimony to help any other women who may be trapped with no escape.

Charlotte Eckler's testimony goes much deeper because she entered into a CLOSED convent, otherwise known as a "cloister," and miraculously escaped. As a young girl growing up in Kansas, Charlotte was convinced she would be doing God's will by becoming a nun and joining a convent. Little did she and her family know the horrors that would await her once she signed her life over to the Catholic Church.

(NOTE: Numerous websites say her last name is "Keckler," but the book of her testimony says her last name was "Eckler." It appears that both spellings are German in origin, which means they both may be correct. I am unable to determine which is most accurate, so I will use the spelling that she used in her testimony.)

Charlotte traveled with her parents to a boarding school in which nuns are trained in particular skills. Charlotte chose to become a nurse, and while at the school was convinced to join a "Cloister," which is a private, closed institution of nuns, in which they have no contact with the outside world, nor do they receive any visitors; she was convinced by a priest that nurses were needed in the Cloisters.

This is an excerpt from Charlotte's testimony:
"After finishing my nurse's training and my schooling, I decided to take my Black Veil and become a Cloistered Nun. Indeed, I attended my own funeral. A crude casket made of rough boards, by the hands of the little Nuns, was placed at the altar in the chapel. During the ceremony, I stepped into the open faced casket and was covered with a heavy drape mortel, [i.e. a black pall/cloth spread over caskets at funerals] For nine hours I lay in that casket for the purpose of dying out to the world, affections and lusts — trying to forget mother, father, brothers, sisters, home and its memories... At the end of the ceremony, I stepped out of the casket, walked to the rear of the altar into a small room. There before the priests — the Bishop and the Mother Superior of the Convent — I took my final vows of Poverty, Chastity [refraining from sexual intercourse] and Obedience. I signed them in blood taken from the lobe of my ear;"


We can already see the unbiblical practices of this wicked convent because Jesus told us not to swear such oaths or vows.

Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear [falsely swear] thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

-Matthew 5:33-37

A righteous man will give his word (i.e. his "yes" or "no") and then keep it, without having to say "I swear I'll do this" or "I promise I'll do that." It is the wicked man who is required to swear oaths and sign contracts because his lying tongue is so froward (i.e. rebellious and ungovernable), he cannot be trusted.

(Read "God Does Not Justify Lies" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)
Baptism is the ceremony we use to show that we were dead, but now washed clean by the regenerating blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. These other ceremonies of lying in a coffin for many hours in bridal gowns is all from the wicked traditions of men, and it has nothing to do with Christ.

(Read "The Biblical Understanding of Baptism" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Furthermore, this shows us that the Catholic Church is taking the reference of the bride of Christ, which is meant for the church as a whole, and turning it into a sexual matter. In Catholic convents, it is only women that go through this process to become a "bride of Christ," and they use the phrase quite literally, which means they are turning what is meant as a metaphor for how the church should act and operate into a perverted sexual matter meant only for females.

In addition to this, Charlotte swore complete slavery to the bishop and "Reverend Mother" that oversaw the convent. (You'll notice I have referred to "Reverend Mother" as the "head mistress" because writing out the title of "Reverend" for men or women makes me sick to my stomach, since "reverend" is reserved only for God in Scripture - Psa 111:9) This means she was to be seen and not heard. She was to see nothing, hear nothing, and speak nothing; her entire existence would now be as a robot, to only do as she was commanded no matter what it was, and knowing what we already know about the sadistic nature of Catholic Church, some of you may see what's coming next.

(Read "Titles Are Unbiblical in the Church" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Charlotte continues in her testimony that the head mistress told her that she would have to suffer ALL the sufferings of Christ. Charlotte lists out everything she was told:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>In the Garden of Olives I shed...</th>
<th>62,200 tears</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>In the Garden of Olives I shed...</td>
<td>97,300 drops of blood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my body I received...</td>
<td>667 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my cheeks...</td>
<td>110 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my neck...</td>
<td>107 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my back...</td>
<td>380 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my breast...</td>
<td>77 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my head...</td>
<td>108 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my side...</td>
<td>38 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my shoulders...</td>
<td>62 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my arms...</td>
<td>44 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my feet...</td>
<td>32 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On my mouth...</td>
<td>30 strokes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They spat in my face...</td>
<td>32 times</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They pushed at my feet...</td>
<td>370 times</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They have thrown me down to the ground...</td>
<td>38 times</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>They pulled me by the beard...</td>
<td>many times</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>By the crown of thorns I received...</td>
<td>100 wounds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I have pleaded for your salvation...</td>
<td>900 times</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>For your conversion...</td>
<td>162 times</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I was in agony...</td>
<td>19 times</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I carried the cross of Calvary...</td>
<td>320 steps</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Of course, none of this really makes sense; for example, how is salvation set apart from conversion? Those two things can't be separated; you can't have one without the other. Also, Christ supposedly suffered all these wounds, and he was only in agony 19 times? Again, none of this makes sense, but more important, none of it is found in Scripture, and so if you're wondering where Catholics are getting these numbers from, it's simply the sadistic traditions of men; nothing more.

Charlotte continues:
"The next morning I received my first penance. [self-punishment] Mother Superior took me to the penance chamber. It was rather barren, with the exception of some devices of torture. Then Mother Superior, with the aid of two Nuns, stripped me to the waist and draped me over a huge wooden cross. Then as Mother Superior watched, the two Nuns whipped me with the flagellation whip, which consisted of six large leather straps with a sharp piece of metal attached to each end, protruding from the base of a round stick approximately eighteen inches long. I was not washed or medically treated after this penance. The blood soaked into my clothes and dried in the wounds, making the wounds all the more painful as I continued work until evening. I was in such a bloody mess when I entered my cell to sleep that I could not remove the inner garments."

Although this will anger and upset most readers, we have to keep in mind that this is rather mild so far compared to what's coming, and it's also rather mild compared to the torture that was done openly during the Inquisition. If you've read the entirety of this book up to this point, then all I can say is: This is what the Catholic Church looks like when stripped bare.

For this next part of Charlotte's testimony, we need to keep in mind that the priests of the Catholic Church also hold the title of "vicar," like when the Pope is called the "Vicar of Christ." The position is like that of a deputy, given all the same power and authority as the sheriff himself. Now you should be able to deduce what's coming next; since the priest is the vicar, and the nun is the bride.

Immediately after finishing all her vows, Charlotte testified of the following:
"Then a priest walked over to my side, locked his arm through mine, and told me that we were going to the Bridal Chamber. In horror I broke the hold and unhesitatingly told him, 'Never!'... At that moment the Mother Superior came in and reminded me of my obligation as the Bride of Christ. I was told that the Priest represented Christ and that his body was sanctified and holy, therefore, whatever he did was not sin... Ask any priest why so many cloistered convents have either the high stone wall with broken glass and spikes cemented at the top and a huge gate that's always locked, or a high fence with barbed wire slanting in at the top like prisons. He will no doubt answer, 'To keep the world out.' But I'll give you another answer. 'It's not to keep the world out, but to keep the Nuns in.'"

As we have already seen, even in the open convents, sexual abuse and exploitation is not uncommon. These extortioners take advantage of their positions over these young girls, and rape them.

Charlotte's diet, along with all the other nuns, was only a piece of bread and small cup of black coffee in the morning, and in the evening, they would have a few cooked vegetables in water (which they called "soup"). These young girls were tortured, and then put to work, cleaning from dawn until dusk every day on a less-than-sufficient diet, and much of their duties included cooking for the priests (while the little nuns were starving), and doing laundry for the priests, which occasionally being required to do penance while doing the priests' laundry by licking the soapy, dirty laundry water with their tongues in the shape of a cross.

The nun's outfit is rather difficult to put on, but according to Charlotte's testimony, these girls had five minutes to dress and be lined up in the main hall. One day, Charlotte did not have time to put on one of her shoes, and as punishment, she was locked in a solitary confinement cell, dark and small with a dirt floor, for three days and nights without food.

All the young nuns were not to be friends with one another because of the constant threat of intense torture; they were trained very early on to lie and/or tattle on one another if any nun put one toe out of line. There are no friends in these cloisters. There are no allies. The nuns did not look out for one another; Charlotte learned quickly to trust no one because if she did, she would soon be dead, or worse.
"We were brought there to be the Brides of Christ, but we found ourselves turned into fornicators with the priests, thieves for stealing food, murderers for having hearts filled with hatred and vengeance, liars and tattlers. Every Nun spied on the other. You dared not trust one soul in the convent. The Nun's only hope was Hell here, and Hell hereafter."


Eckler died in 1983, working as an evangelist to Catholics, and especially nuns, for which she had a heart of great compassion. Her escape was quite miraculous, and very painful, being that she was on the run for two days, as a starving young girl, with nowhere to go in a strange place, no food or water, a compound fracture in her arm, and hiding constantly out of fear of the Catholic Church to find her and take her back. Eckler requested that her documented story not be released in book form until after she died, so no one would ever say that she was using her testimony as a way to make money; she wanted all these little nuns to be born again in the faith of Christ and released from their prisons.

After reading all this, it may confuse some people how the Catholic Church can get so many people on board with the convents and nuns, and how they can convince so many people that it is good. It is through lies and tradition that they are able to fool the people, through their use of the word 'mystical', and I believe Mary Pakiz (a former nun I quoted earlier) puts it best:

"I found that the term 'mystical' has been something that the Catholic Church employs each time they want to get the people to believe something without understanding it. They will tell the people that you really and truly don't have to understand this, it just is accepted. So 'mystical' covers a great deal of deceit."


How does torture help people in purgatory? It's "mystical." Why are nuns pressured or required to have sex with priests? It's "mystical." Why does the Catholic Church cling to these nonsensical traditions? It's "mystical." That's always the excuse for that which they cannot answer. As I've already stated, Catholicism is a pagan mysticism religion like any other; the only difference is that, through the Devil's blessings, they have a lot more money and power, and through that money and power, abuse women and children without fear of reprisal.

#10 – Priests and Sexual Abuse

It's not just the nuns that are being abused by the priests of the Catholic Church; since the turn of the century, Catholic priests sexually violating young boys and girls is so common in the news, it's practically become a running joke. I've heard discussions in which someone would make a comment about touching a child inappropriately, and the other person responds, "Do I look like a Catholic priest to you?" Although the situation is no joke, the theme has become so well-understood to many people in various countries around the world, the knowledge that rape and molestation is happening in the Catholic Church is just generally accepted among many citizens.

I will repeat 1 Timothy 4 from the previous chapter to emphasize the unbiblical mandate the Catholic Church puts on their priests, namely that they are forbidden to marry a woman:

Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils: Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. - 1 Timothy 4:1-3

This prevention of marriage, which was designed by God so that men would not be alone (Gen 2:18), is leading priests into sexual sins. The lust of their flesh ends up erupting like a fire because they are continually prevented from having concord with a wife in the Biblical bonds of marriage, and thus, when their lust overflows, they not only take advantage of nuns, both children and adults, but they also molest and sodomize young boys.
Gerald Fitzgerald, a bishop of the Catholic Church, and founder of the Servants of the Paraclete (a Catholic order with the specific purpose of treating pedophile priests), wrote a letter in 1957 to bishops with a warning about sex offenders in Catholic leadership:

"We are amazed to find how often a man, who would be behind bars if he were not a priest, is entrusted with the cura animarum [care of souls]."


Though not all priests conduct themselves in such an offensive manner that we should expect all priests would have been involved in such wicked sexual sins, the fact is that there is a large amount of such criminal activity that has taken place in the Catholic Church. That fact is indisputable. What we are really going to focus on in this chapter is not only how much is going on, but how much the Papacy of the Catholic Church knows about, how little they have done to stop it, how much effort they put in to protecting the criminals who abuse children, and how much money they have paid out to settle lawsuits for sexual abuse.

First, let's look at a few examples to give an idea of what's going on. In 2016, the Canadian Superior Court approved a $30-million settlement for 150 sexual abuse victims in a school for the deaf operated by the Catholic Church; $20-million was to be paid by the Clerics of St. Viateur, who operate under the Roman Catholic Church out of Montreal, and there were a total of 28 Catholic priests convicted of sexual assault.


In another case:

"The Archdiocese of St. Paul and Minneapolis says it has agreed to pay a $210 million settlement to 450 victims of clergy sexual abuse, one of the largest payouts to date in the U.S. over the Catholic church's priest abuse scandal."


Typically, there would be a statute of limitations on such cases, in which a priest could not be prosecuted after a certain amount of time, but Minnesota Legislature approved a three-year window to lift the statute of limitations, so that all prior sexual abuse victims could come forward to prosecute the Catholic Church for the sexual crimes of their priests. Soon after the statute of limitations was lifted, hundreds of claims were filed against the Catholic Church, to the point that the archdiocese (district for the Catholic Church under one archbishop) filed for bankruptcy, and according to the article, as of May 2018, 18 dioceses have filed for bankruptcy in Minnesota alone.

Even as I was writing this book, in August of 2018, the Shelby County News, the county where I live in Indiana, reported a police investigation into child sex abuse by a local priest:

"The Archdiocese of Indianapolis released information about a priest that has been suspended amid charges of child sex abuse. The priest, at one time, served in Shelbyville. Fr. John Maung, a priest for the Archdiocese of Indianapolis, has been suspended after an individual made a report to the Archdiocese that they were abused as a child several decades ago by Fr. Maung... The St. Joseph Catholic Church website says Fr. Maung was in Shelbyville from 1986-1998."


Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these: Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness [i.e. unable to control sexual lusts], Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

-Galatians 5:19-21
Similar reports have been flooding in all over the world over the past couple of decades. Here's another from the eastern United States:

"The Rev. Paul R. Shanley, who is accused of molesting at least 26 boys while he was a priest in the Boston Archdiocese, was arrested today in San Diego and charged with three counts of child rape... Since the clergy sexual abuse scandal erupted in Boston in January, prosecutors here and around the country have been frustrated that many of the accusations against priests could not be prosecuted because the acts happened too long ago, many of them in the 1960's or 1970's, and fell outside statutes of limitations."


Concerning the "scandal in Boston in January" of 2002, here's the article for that:

"Yesterday, the Globe reported that Cardinal Bernard F. Law, during his first year in Boston in 1984, assigned [Rev. John J.] Geoghan to St. Julia's in Weston even though Geoghan had been removed from his two prior parishes for molesting children. In one of those cases, in 1980, Geoghan asserted that his repeated abuse of seven boys in one family, which was discovered that year, was not a 'serious' problem. That is according to a church timeline of Geoghan's career - six parish assignments in 34 years with accusations that he molested more than 130 children."


Finally, I decided to type in "catholic priest sex abuse" into Google News just to give readers an idea of how much of this is going on. There is so much activity on the topic of Catholic priest sexual abuse every week, there's no way any one person is going to be able to document all of it. Here are a just a few of the titles to the news articles I found just by doing a quick search:

(Check out the website for a larger view.)
All the news articles in the image above were published within a three-week period, and these were only a fraction of what I found. The scandals are pouring out of newspapers and magazines constantly, all around the world, on a daily basis.

According to the National Catholic Reporter, the Catholic Church (as of Nov 2015) had paid out almost $4 billion (i.e. 4,000 million dollars) in costs related to sexual abuse by priests. They also reported that these numbers are only based on those settlements which are part of public record, as many of the dioceses who are members of the U.S. Bishops' Conference did not make their financial reports public, even though they are required do so by law (via 501c3 contract), AND, this number does not include those settlements which were reached with nondisclosure or confidentiality restrictions. (i.e. The number of $4 billion is probably quite low.)

Many of these sexual abuse cases are requiring the state lifting the statute of limitations for special reasons, namely because children do not have the cognitive reasoning or understanding to know what is happening to them, and thus, they end up prosecuting when they are adults. The Catholic Church has taken great pains to try and convince their parishioners that these are isolated incidents or just media exaggeration.

In fact, according to interviews with news correspondents to Rome and the Vatican, the bishops and cardinals of the Catholic Church attempted to give the impression that sexual abuse was only taking place in the U.S. and Canada, trying to shift the blame to a region, instead of a worldwide religious problem, in order to protect the Vatican from being accused of ignoring child abuse.

Robert Mickens, a reporter for a Catholic newspaper said:
"One of the things Vatican officials have tried to do is portray this an 'American thing' or, at best, an 'Anglo-Saxon' thing, [i.e. Germanic inhabitants of England]"

Vatican Correspondent for the Daily Fact, an Italian newspaper, said:
"[He imitates what the bishops and cardinals say:] 'Oh, the sex abuse scandals, they happen only in the United States, in Canada. And suddenly, in the year 2010, the great scandal explodes in Europe. It explodes in Ireland, in Germany, in Austria, in Switzerland, in France, in Belgium."
It's an embarrassing situation; no one's going to argue that it isn't, but these are just convenient excuses because this problem is taking place worldwide, and as of 2018, it is extraordinarily easy to find news articles on the internet from all over the world showing the evidence of this problem in nearly every country where the Catholic Church has a presence; however, one of the most absurd excuses used by the leadership in the Vatican is the tale that they didn't know about the sexual abuse of children. In fact, the popes of the Catholic Church have known more about the sexual abuse than anyone else, and worse still, they sat on the information and did nothing.

In 2016, a German investigation led to prosecution of priests who had sexually abused young boys in a famous Catholic boys' choir in Bavaria. There were fifty cases of sexual abuse, and they further discovered that many more cases (beyond those fifty) involved physical abuse, everything "from beatings to food deprivation." (Note: This is very similar to the abuse of nuns.)


Prepare yourself because this is where things start getting really interesting:
"The news received widespread attention not only because of its disturbing content but because the director of the Regensburg boys' choir from 1964 to 1994 was Georg Ratzinger, the older brother of Joseph Ratzinger, who became Benedict XVI. Joseph Ratzinger was the Archbishop of Munich from 1977 until 1981, when he went to head up the powerful Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, which establishes theological orthodoxy and was also one of the branches of the Church that dealt with priestly sexual abuse."


In Chapter 8, we covered the Inquisition, and I provided documentation to show that the Office of Inquisition was reopened under the name, "Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith." That's right; the head office that handled sexual abuse cases was overseen by the leader (i.e. Grand Inquisitor) of the newly reopened Office of Inquisition, which had, for hundreds of years, tortured, raped, and murdered countless men, women, and children.

While heading up the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, Ratzinger (Benedict XVI) had all sexual abuse cases within the Catholic Church worldwide be brought to his desk. He had all the data in their secret archives. He knew about the cases, and it was very likely he knew about his own brother's abuse of children in Germany, and just from that case alone, the conflict of interest is screaming so loud, it's almost deafening; it certainly it brings into question how Ratzinger became the Pope. (i.e. He knew about the many sins of those who cast their vote for his seat as Roman Pontiff.)

In countries like Ireland, many Catholics began to leave the Catholic Church, and would not come to Mass anymore because they were tired of the lies and contradictions in the numerous sex abuse lawsuits that were being charged against priests, a lot of the anger due to the cover-up and lack of effort by priests and bishops to contact local police in response to child sexual abuse at the hands of their fellow priests and bishops. Ratzinger, as Pope Benedict XVI, with all the knowledge he had about child sex abuse in Catholic parishes around the world, then decided to publish the "Pastoral Letter of the Holy Father Pope Benedict XVI to the Catholics of Ireland," which addresses the Irish bishops:
"It cannot be denied that some of you and your predecessors failed, at times grievously, to apply the long-established norms of canon law to the crime of child abuse. Serious mistakes were made in responding to allegations. I recognize how difficult it was to grasp the extent and complexity of the problem, to obtain reliable information and to make the right decisions in the light of conflicting expert advice. Nevertheless, it must be admitted that grave errors of judgement were made and failures of leadership occurred. All this has seriously undermined your credibility and effectiveness. I appreciate the efforts you have made to remedy past mistakes and to guarantee that they do not happen again. Besides fully implementing the norms of canon law in addressing cases of child abuse, continue to cooperate with the civil authorities in their area of competence. Clearly, religious superiors should do likewise."


On the surface, it appears that Ratzinger identified the problem and addressed it, namely, that priests and bishops were not doing their job, and that they should "follow canon law" to work with local authorities to prosecute sex offenders among leadership in the Catholic Church. However, the problem is that this statement angered many priests and bishops because it was a shift of blame (which is quite common with the papacy); Ratzinger had blamed the priests and bishops for not keeping Catholic Canon law concerning child abuse, but in fact, they HAD kept Catholic canon law by NOT reporting the abuse.
After the release of Ratzinger's publication, an anonymous source (obvious within Catholic clergy) released a confidential document from a Catholic Apostolic Nuncio (i.e. a diplomatic representative of the Holy See) to the media, showing that bishops were instructed NOT to report child sexual abuse cases to the police, and that doing so would violate canon law:

"The Congregation for the Clergy has attentively studied the complex question of sexual abuse of minors by clerics and the document entitled 'Child Sexual Abuse: Framework for a Church Response', published by the Irish Catholic Bishops' Advisory Committee. The Congregation wishes to emphasize the need for this document to conform to the canonical norms presently in force. The text, however, contains procedures and dispositions which appear contrary to canonical discipline and which, if applied, could invalidate the acts of the same Bishops who are attempting to put a stop to these problems. If such procedures were to be followed by Bishops and there were cases of eventual hierarchical recourse lodged at the Holy See, the results could be highly embarrassing and detrimental to those same Diocesan authorities. In particular, the situation of 'mandatory reporting' gives rise to serious reservations of both a moral and a canonical nature...

For these reasons and because the abovementioned text is not an official document of the Episcopal Conference but merely a study document, I am directed to inform the individual Bishops of Ireland of the preoccupations of the Congregation in its regard, underlining that in the sad cases of accusations of sexual abuse by clerics, the procedures established by the Code of Canon Law must be meticulously followed under pain of invalidity of the acts involved if the priest so punished were to make hierarchical recourse against his Bishop."

-Luciano Storero, "Apostolic Nunciature in Ireland N. 808/97," Jan 31, 1997; See above image to read the document.

Some readers may not have understood that since it is buried in many long sentences and complex words and phrases; however, in short, the Catholic diplomat is afraid of embarrassment to the Catholic Church, that people would lose faith in their priestly authority. Notice specifically that he said the "sad cases of accusation of sexual abuse," not, "sad cases of sexual abuse;" meaning that he is emphasizing the horror of the accusation against the priesthood, rather than the horror of children being raped.
Therefore, the recommendations to contact local authorities in matters of child sexual abuse in the "Framework for a Church Response" document were said to be only labeled as "study material" and NOT instruction, which was stated to dissuade bishops and priests from contacting the police. Furthermore, Storero told Irish bishops that they ought not to ever report these "sad cases" because not only would it break Catholic Canon Law, but the priests would also have their positions and wealth threatened by others in cases of wrongful accusation.

Ultimately, Vatican authorities care more about tradition and their own well-being than they care for abused children.

*Then said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but woe unto him, through whom they come! It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones.*


This is not an isolated incident with Ireland either; this is a worldwide problem with the Catholic Church, and the hierarchy specifically, including the Papacy, that ignores and covers up sexual abuse allegations to save face. To understand this in more detail, let's take a closer look at Marcial (mar-see-al) Maciel (mah-see-el) Degollado, a famous (or infamous) Mexican Catholic priest and pedophile who was praised many times by Pope John Paul II for his well-known work in fund-raising for the Catholic Church.

In 1941, Maciel founded The Legion of Christ (sometimes called the Legionaries of Christ) and the Regnum Christi Movement (i.e. Kingdom of Christ Movement), who were a zealous group of fund-raisers for the Catholic Church. In the course of their existence, they have raised enormous amounts of money for the Catholic Church, and have started Catholic seminary colleges all around the world.

"After founding the Legion of Christ in Mexico in 1941, Maciel built a vast network of schools, colleges, seminaries and lucrative real estate holdings. At its peak the Legion had an annual budget of $650 million, more than 650 priests and 60,000 followers in an affiliated lay group also founded by Maciel, Regnum Christi. Its pockets were so deep that Mexicans sometimes called the order the 'Millionarios de Cristo.'"

-Jason Berry, "Father Maciel Is Our Father, Say Two Mexican Men, And He Molested Us," ABC News, Mar 5, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [https://abcn.ws/2M0x3oq]

Maciel was able to become friends with many famous and wealthy people, who supported the Legion of Christ:

"Politically, he was closely linked with the far right in the US, mixing with Jeb Bush, brother of George W Bush, Rick Santorum, a former US senator [also U.S. presidential candidate], and Thomas Monaghan, the Domino's Pizza magnate [a wealthy and influential person - also the founder of Ave Maria University in Florida] who paid for the new cathedral in Nicaragua's capital, Managua, which replaced the one that was destroyed in the 1972 earthquake."


Maciel also had ties and received funding from Steve McEveety, producer of Mel Gibson's The Passion of the Christ, Spanish opera singer Placido Domingo, and former CIA director William Casey. He was praised by Mary Ann Glendon, former U.S. ambassador to the Vatican, claiming that he had a "radiant holiness" and that he was key in "advancing the New Evangelization." Author George Weigel, Founding President of the James Madison Foundation, said, "If Father Maciel and his charism [spiritual gift] as a founder are to be judged by the fruits of this work, those fruits are most impressive indeed." Maciel's work has also been praised by CNN commentator William Bennett and CNN religion correspondent Delia Gallagher, so in short, Maciel has been praised worldwide as a shining trophy of the Catholic Church.

It should be obvious why Maciel was not being investigated; his exposure would have been a grievous embarrassment for the Catholic Church, and a huge loss of funding for the Papacy. During Maciel's time in the fund-raising spotlight, before the reopening of the Office of Inquisition under Ratzinger, any accusation of child sexual abuse should have been investigated by the Congregation for Institutes of Consecrated Life and Societies of Apostolic Life, but the head of that department, Cardinal Eduardo Martinez Somalo, received many cash gifts from Maciel, one eye witness testified he received $90,000 cash in an envelope; thus, it should not take a genius detective to figure out why Somalo never investigated Maciel.


Pope John Paul II edified Maciel and his fund-raising army:
"During a 1993 speech in St. Peter's Square, John Paul said, 'You are all sons and daughters of Father Maciel!' In 1994, he called Maciel 'an efficacious [effective] guide to youth.' John Paul continued to praise him after the allegations were filed against Maciel at the Vatican's Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith — where they gathered dust for six years."


Indeed, John Paul II continued to praise Maciel, as we can see from an address he gave to Maciel's organization:
"With special affection I greet your beloved founder, Fr [Father] Marcial Maciel, and extend to him my heartfelt congratulations on this important event, cordially thanking him for the words he addressed to me on everyone's behalf."

It's obvious that John Paul II did not want Maciel prosecuted either, even though it is now well-known public record that Maciel had raped and molested at least 20 of the young boys in the Legion of Christ seminary. Maciel was also taking morphine on a regular basis, and became an addict. In addition, Maciel would visit monasteries under his control every few days and insist on being sexually pleased by one of the boys.

However, it doesn't end there; Maciel also began to target very wealthy Mexican widows, had children with them, and sexually abused his own children. Blanca Bonilla was one of the women targeted; Maciel gave her a fake identity, calling himself "Raul Rivas," claiming he was an international detective for oil companies (i.e. lies), and although they didn't marry, he elected to become the adoptive father of her 3-year-old son, and when he was 7, Maciel attempted to rape him. There are many such examples of Maciel taking the children of his mistresses on trips to Europe, and molesting them during their travels.


Reporters started to gather information and publish these facts in 1997, and they attempted to contact the Vatican to get a response. There was no response.
Of course, dedicated Catholics will argue that perhaps John Paul II never received this information, which is beyond absurd; we're talking about the most highly revered fund-raiser for the Catholic Church at the time, in which the Pope was giving speeches complimenting Maciel for his work, and for this information to not have reached the Pope, who is surrounded by those who DEFINITELY had the information, is ridiculous. What's more ridiculous is a Catholic who would make that claim, because upon doing so, a Catholic would have to presuppose that the Catholic Church, likely the most wealthy and powerful institution in the known world, is blind, stupid, disorganized, and completely unconcerned about the welfare of children, and if that's the case, why do they blindly follow and give money to them?

Now things start to get really strange because after John Paul II's death in 2005, Ratzinger had the prosecutor general of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith (i.e. the Office of Inquisition) go to New York to retrieve all the investigative documentation on the sexual charges against Maciel, and he returned the following week with enough information to have Maciel prosecuted in a court of law. Keep in mind that this information on Maciel was known to the Vatican in the early 90s, and possibly sooner than that, so the Vatican sat on this information for, at minimum, over a decade while Maciel continued to rape children.

Ratzinger, even though he had the information, did nothing to prosecute Maciel. After Ratzinger took the office of the Pope as Benedict XVI, he was asked the following by a priest named Lombardi:

"LOMBARDI: It is known and recent polls have shown that the sexual abuse scandals have shaken the trust of the faithful in the Church. How do you intend to act so as to re-establish this trust?

BENEDICT XVI: Above all I must say that these revelations were a shock for me. They are a great sadness, and it is hard to understand how this perversion of the priestly ministry was possible."


Ratzinger did address the victims much later in his response, but I want readers to notice that his first response was NOT the horror of what was done to these children; the children were an afterthought. Ratzinger's first thought was, "Oh, the horrors of the tarnished name of the precious Catholic priesthood!" This is standard operating procedure in any cult; namely, the tradition and religious system is protected first and foremost, and then, if time, money, and circumstance allow, and as long as it doesn't dirty the name of the cult and its hierarchy, the victims might get some help.

Help, LORD: for the godly man ceaseth; for the faithful fail from among the children of men. They speak vanity every one with his neighbour: with flattering lips and with a double heart do they speak. -Psalm 12:1-2

Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy [way of thinking] and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments [first teachings] of the world [like the Catholic Church], and not after Christ. -Colossians 2:8

Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. -Mark 7:7

I was curious to see what kind of excuses a Catholic priest might offer in his futile efforts to justify his sexual sins, and so I looked deeper into the case of Lawrence Murphy, a Catholic priest appointed to be headmaster over St. John's School for the Deaf in Milwaukee, Wisconsin in 1963. In 1974, law enforcement began to take notice of sexual abuse reports coming in from the deaf school, but in response to these allegations, the Catholic Church only placed Murphy on temporary sick leave, and he later took up position over various parishes to continue working with children.

(See Andy McSmith, "The priest who abused deaf boys for 24 years," The Independent, Mar 27, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [https://ind.pn/2Mrtzrd])

Years later, many of the young boys, now grown men, tried to bring up charges against Murphy, but the statute of limitations would not allow them to do so. Also, some of the boys had been tricked into signing confidentiality clauses against their will (i.e. a crime known as "fraudulent inducement"), which prevented them from bringing him to court for the crime.

(They were tricked because they were deaf, and not being able to read English very well, they were manipulated into signing documents they thought were to start the process of filing a lawsuits against the Catholic Church, but turned out to be nondisclosure agreements in which the boys had to admit fault instead of Murphy.)
Although Murphy was never prosecuted until his death in 1998, Murphy did go through a psychiatric evaluation with a therapist a few years before he died. The notes of the therapist not only document that Murphy had confessed to sexually molesting about 200 children, but also his excuses for why he committed the crimes:

- "There was rampant homosexuality among the older boys. I fixed the problem."
- "I thought if I'd play around with a kid once per week they would have their needs met."
- "I thought I was taking their sins on myself."
- "It was sex education for them. They were confused about sex."
- "-would feel penis, if erect - would masturbate them."
- "Afterward I prayed and went to confession."


This type of justification is what police departments refer to as "Noble Cause Corruption," which is a method of corruption in which the person who is committing the crime is seen as a noble person with a good cause, and therefore, many people submit to the crime out of fear:

"Traditional corruption is defined as the use of one's official position for personal gain. The personal gain can be economic or otherwise, such as sexual favors. As a profession, we have long understood this type of abuse of power and, when discovered and investigated, those involved are arrested. A less obvious but perhaps even more threatening type of misconduct in law enforcement is Noble Cause Corruption... Noble Cause Corruption is a mindset or sub-culture which fosters a belief that the ends justify the means. In other words, law enforcement is engaged in a mission to make our streets and communities safe, and if that requires suspending the constitution or violating laws ourselves in order to accomplish our mission, then for the greater good of society, so be it. The officers who adopt this philosophy lose their moral compass."


Though the main focus of the *Public Agency Training Council* article was on police officers who do evil in the name of good, Catholic priests who try to justify their sexual abuse do the exact same thing; believing their sin is a "holy act" in the name of God. This is a form of blasphemy, which is to attribute that which is of the Devil to the Christian God of the Bible.

*Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.*

- John 8:44

However, to fully understand Noble Cause Corruption, we need to also understand the mindset of the Catholic victims. Most of the children involved are young enough that they don't even know what sex is, and so they really don't understand what's happening to them, but the brainwashed mindset that the Catholic Church is sacred, the priests are holy, and they can do no wrong, is, in this author's opinion, the most damaging crime against them because it is by that corrupt philosophy (i.e. way of thinking) that these sex crimes are allowed to continue in the Catholic Church.

The *Canadian Broadcasting Company* published a report in 2007 that an 84-year-old man named Charles Sylvestre died in an Ontario prison three months into his three-year term for sexually assaulting dozens of young girls (12-14 years old) between 1954 and 1986 while he was working as a Catholic priest. Over the years, most of his young victims had suppressed the sexual abuse they suffered, until later in their adult years, the memories of the man (who the young students had nick-named "Sylvester the Molester" and "Father Feeler") came rushing back, and over the course of years, many of the victims found each other, and prosecuted the priest.


But at the time the abuse occurred, many of the girls thought they had done wrong. The feeling of what Sylvestre did to them, or made them do to him, was a bad feeling, but the girls thought that they must have done something wrong to make him do these things to them; they ended up blaming themselves and not talking to anyone about what happened because, after all, he's a Catholic priest, and their brainwashed perception was that there was no way a Catholic priest could do anything wrong.
The following video documentary is from a short-lived, hard-to-find TV show called *Unforgivable Crimes*; this episode covered the story of “Father Sylvestre” and his crimes against young girls:

**Pedophile Priest Charles Sylvestre and His Victims**

https://youtu.be/9wtHD2XGOFM

**CAROLYN JEWELL:** "The first time I met Father Sylvestre was when he was brought into the class, introduced as a visiting priest. You have to love your priest; I mean, he was a nice person, he appeared to be a nice person. You love all your priests."


You can see the Catholic mentality in her thought process she was raised on as a child; namely, that the priests are holy and sacred. You don't dare question them, nor do you ever believe they could do wrong. Jewell was one of Sylvestre's first victims.

**CAROLYN JEWELL:** "We used to play hide-and-go-seek with him. He took us swimming; he used to make milkshakes for us... We were special. We were the youngest kids in the whole school to begin with, and so we felt—I think we probably flaunted it whenever we saw the high school kids. Like, 'We're the little kids and we're special. He likes us better.'"

Part of the "special" feeling was that these girls were hand-picked by Sylvestre to volunteer at the Catholic Church. It seemed to give the girls some sense of purpose and value, and they clung to that, even though the priest had other reasons for choosing them.

**IRENE DESCHENES:** "I just remember feeling so ecstatic, like one of the chosen ones. All the children loved him. There was no reason not to like him; he treated us well and was very kind and gentle."

**JOANNE MORRISON:** "I felt that probably God had something to do with it; that God was happy with me. So if the priest chose me, that it was, in fact, God choosing me. You wanted to be your best, and do your best, and to be picked was an honor—a huge honor."

It wasn't just the children who had this philosophy, but also the parents. These women would later testify that Sylvestre would sometimes sexually fondle them in public, where other people could see, even during church when the families of the girls were present, but no one paid any attention because, after all, he's a priest; in the Catholic brainwashed mindset, there's no way he could be malicious, so his actions were ignored.

To put it another way, if this man were not wearing the outfit of a Catholic priest, the parents of these children would be outraged and very protective of their children. However, when the man puts on the garb of a priest, suddenly, their eyes are blinded, and they do not judge righteous judgment.

*Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.*

- John 7:24

Among the Catholic priesthood are many Pharisees that only make the outside clean to impress the masses:

*And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening [ferocious animal hungry for prey] and wickedness [sin].*  
- Luke 11:39

*Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves... Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.*  
- Matthew 7:15-17

Once the volunteer work was done, Sylvestre would offer the girls treats, like candy and soda, but he would always make them come sit on his lap to get them.
JOANNE MORRISON: "You had to come and sit on his lap, and this created huge turmoil within me... You would usually need to lie, somehow, to get off the lap; at least, I did. And then, I would have this guilt because, one, I had no idea what sex was, so I had no idea that that's what he was doing to me. All I knew was, I didn't like it, and it gave me a very 'no' feeling."

IRENE DESCHENES: "He would present us with the candy or pop or whatever, but first he would do this [tapped finger on cheek], and that meant kiss on the cheek. And that wasn't uncomfortable at the time because, you know, I kissed my uncles on the cheek, things like that. Then, as time went on, he would offer us these treats and then he would do this [tapped finger on lips]... The progression was very slow, that it wasn't all of sudden one day saying, 'Oh wait, this is wrong', because what he did yesterday kind of felt a little uncomfortable, but 'it couldn't be wrong'."

CAROLYN JEWELL: "The first time that Father Sylvestre had touched me, we were playing hide-and-go-seek at the grotto. His rule was that if he found you, he would wrestle with you. He put me on the ground and he felt me up. He also went underneath my clothes, and didn't tell anybody... My initial reaction was that I must have done something wrong: because that felt bad, then I must have done something bad to get him to do that."

As the video goes on, the victims testify that he would do his worst when he got them alone. He would catch them in a hallway by themselves, or assault them during confessional sessions. Sylvestre told Jewell that if she ever told anyone, she would go to hell, her parents and sister would go to hell, and if she didn't tell anyone, he would do what he could to try and prevent them from ending up in hell. The truth is that only those who do not repent of their sin and come to faith in the Lord Jesus Christ will end up in hell, and all Catholics, not just Sylvestre, are on their way to hell if they don't repent (i.e. to have grief and godly sorrow) of their sin, and truth in Christ alone, in His grace alone. (See "Hell Is Real And Many People Are Going There" & "Is Repentance Part of Salvation?" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

As a side note, Irene Deschenes went on to start an organization called SNAP [Survivors Network of those Abused by Priests]. This was the first organization ever started as a help and support group for men, women, and children who are abused specifically by those in positions of religious authority in the Catholic Church. However, that being said, it should also be noted that with money comes greed, and the organization has taken a turn for the worse in 2017, when founders left the organization because lawyers and board members were making decisions that were exploiting abuse victims for cash from settlements. (See David Gibson, "SNAP founder quits in second major loss for abuse advocacy group following lawsuit," National Catholic Reporter, Feb 5, 2017, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2MOLnwT])

The Noble Cause Corruption doesn't just affect girls, I've also listened to the testimony of many men who were raped by priests when they were boys. They also didn't understand sex, and they didn't understand that what the priest was doing was wrong; they were also embarrassed by the situation, but most importantly, they didn't think anyone would believe them even if they told an adult, and often times, they weren't believed because, once again, he's a priest, and the Noble Cause Corruption mentality that a "man of the cloth" could do no wrong is a foundation in their Catholic minds.

Some readers may be upset that I would say that this Catholic philosophy is more destructive, and does more damage, than the acts of child sexual abuse, but it's true. The reason child sexual abuse gets ignored in such institutions, even when it happens almost in plain view of the parents, is because of the noble facade of Catholic priests. It's also the reason why massive amounts of sexual abuse continues to come out of parishes around the world, and why children are still being assaulted in Catholicism today.

This matter is not an issue of the Catholic Church's negligence, because that would mean the bishops and popes would just be ignoring the matter; rather, this is an issue of pure deception and cover-up. To further demonstrate that point, let's take a closer look at St. John's Abbey in Collegeville, Minnesota, which has recently uncovered criminal activity that could not be described in any other way but accessory to commit serial rape against minors and harboring sex criminals.
After getting small pieces of documentation here and there during the investigation on St. John's Abbey, in 2016, the monastery finally released more than 15,000 pages of documents related to the 18 priests that were sexual offenders:

"The disclosure comes as the latest chapter in the jagged history for the Benedictine community in Collegeville, Minn., on the issue of clergy sexual abuse, one that at times has seen it attempt to lead in understanding the epidemic but at others fall ill to the plague of its horrors. Like many others before them, the disclosed documents provide a recounting of what the abbey knew when regarding each monk — nearly half of whom have died — and often the attempts to shuttle them from place to place to avoid possible lawsuits and scandal."


This is a very common theme in the Catholic Church, and one I've seen many times in the cases I've researched: If a priest is caught sexually molesting children in one parish, he is simply moved to another parish, not to protect the children, but to prevent a potentially embarrassing investigation. Depending on how much knowledge may be available to the public and state officials, the priest will sometimes be moved out of the country in order to prevent him from being prosecuted by any lawful authority.

"The thousands of pages from the monks' files — detailing everything from sacramental records and ministerial reviews to medical histories and psychological exams to personal letters and emails — contain many now-common themes from the church's sexual abuse crisis, where [Catholic] officials do not always act on warning signs, sometimes on the back of expert opinions, or fail to heed recommendations from counselors and psychologists. In some cases, priests with known allegations of sexual abuse, whether with minors or college students at St. John's University, were able to continue traveling to the abbey's monasteries abroad, including in Japan and the Bahamas."


Although the priests had duties to perform at these monasteries, in a nutshell, sex abusers in the Catholic Church are sent on vacation to exotic islands. This statement is far more literal than most people realize, and to understand that more clearly, we'll need to look at the testimony of Patrick Wall, a former student and monk from St. John's Abbey:

"Patrick Wall, a former monk at the abbey who now works with Anderson's law firm, told NCR the files represent for him a confirmation and an affirmation, first of all, that we weren't crazy, and that yes, there were that many perpetrators on campus."


Catholics, and others who revere the Catholic Church, would often call Wall crazy for telling people that St. John's Abbey had numerous sex offenders on staff at the school. Wall graduated from St. John's Abbey and went on to be a monk who was a "fixer," meaning that it was his job to travel around and put out fires for the Catholic Church by handing out non-disclosure contracts and settlement money, and he gave the following testimony in a documentary interview:

"There are treatment centers—before ordination [[the act of ordaining], I had no idea that we had treatment centers around the world for priests to go to when they sexually molested, raped, and sodomized kids! I didn't know that. My parents didn't know that. I didn't know that we had 55 molesters in my monastery. I didn't know there were more than 70 molesters operating in the archdiocese. [Catholic district in the region] That wasn't public knowledge... I thought I was going there to uncover the crime, to heal the wounds; I thought it was pastoral care, You know, comfort the afflicted, what we're ordained for, but the people sending me in obviously had ulterior motives. You know, they would give you authorization up to $250,000 to settle a case, if you could get a confidentiality order, [i.e. the victim can't talk about it] And in 1995, we had a budget of seven million dollars to handle the various problems of childhood sexual abuse. And most people don't want to have anything go public; I mean, in the Catholic mindset, you don't sue the church. They want to know that it's going to stop."


Wall is correct; that is the Catholic mindset that it is a sinful thing to sue the Catholic Church because of the facade that they are "holy." The sad part is that the Catholic Church has no interest in helping any of their victims unless they get sued, so ignoring the abused children, which the papacy has always done, has been the most convenient and lucrative (i.e. financially beneficial) option for them.
Through his new position of covering up the crimes of the Catholic Church, Wall discovered that the sexual rape of children was allowed to continue, and using money that was donated for the relief of the poor and needy, the Catholic Church instead used that money to pay for the silence of victims so the rapists could continue to assault children. Disgusted with what he learned, Wall left the Catholic priesthood.

During the interview, the film crew asked Wall if the Catholic Church had a policy to contact the police in any case. Wall said, "Never. That's the worldwide policy: To snuff out scandal."


If you go back to the beginning of this chapter, I quoted a man named Gerald Fitzgerald, a Catholic priest from Boston, who said that he was amazed at how many men would be in prison if they didn't have the title of a priest. In 1947, after receiving many reports of child sexual abuse, Fitzgerald formed an organization in the Catholic Church called the Congregation of the Servants of the Paraclete (paraclete meaning "advocate" or "counselor"), which still exists today, and the order's purpose was to rehabilitate pedophile priests.

(See Servants of the Paraclete, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [theservants.org])

Fitzgerald was hoped that spiritual treatment would be the best thing for the rehabilitation of pedophiles, and indeed, it normally would be, but since the Catholic Church is a false religion that is not of God, there is no healing that will come from the Spirit of God through their wicked religion. Though Fitzgerald had the right idea that men should come to repentance of their sin, forcing them to do it in retreats is not real repentance because, Biblically, repentance must be given to men by the Lord God. (Read "Is Repentance Part of Salvation?" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth;
-2 Timothy 2:25

For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.
-Romans 10:10

The main point, however, is that Fitzgerald believed that sexually offending priests should be hidden in monasteries away from parishioners and the public eye. Fitzgerald wrote letters to the Pope, and many letters to bishops, talking about the problem of pedophilia in the Catholic Church, and he requested permission to take further actions to expand the Servants of the Paraclete.


"So he [Fitzgerald] thought, 'Let's get an island. You can't stop them, but you can contain them. Let's get an island in the Caribbean.' He sent a priest out. He was looking in Barbados, he was looking in various islands, and they went ahead and they actually did begin the process to buy an island."

Indeed, Fitzgerald sent out a priest by the name of Fitton to search for an island, and when he found one he liked, he put a $5,000 down-payment on purchasing an island resort for pedophiles. The island is called Carriacou, off the coast of Grenada in the Caribbean, and is famous for its beautiful beaches and coral reefs.

However, some of the higher-ups in the chain of command didn't like the idea, so they ordered Fitzgerald to sell the portion of the island they had just purchased because, in the end, the Catholic Church decided that hiding them away was not a good idea (i.e. it was not profitable for them), so instead, they decided to attempt rehabilitating the sex offenders and recirculating them back into parishes. From the 1950s to 1990s, the Servants of the Paraclete spent 80 million dollars, treating over 2,000 priests in centers located in Europe, Africa, South America, North America, and the Philippines. (See Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God, Home Box Office, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [youtu.be/ckmZahKS-Zo?t=39m50s])

I want readers to understand that the entire purpose of all this time and money spent by the Catholic Church is to cover up sex abuse. Because their traditions are the most highly esteemed god in their minds, they refuse to believe that their false religious system has created an environment that is not only pedophile-friendly, but protects those criminals from exposure.
To see the hidden results of the Paraclete experiment to rehabilitate and recirculate rapists in the Catholic priesthood, let's take a closer look at Tony Walsh, a Catholic priest that would end up causing a lot of turmoil in Ireland. In 1979, Walsh was appointed to Ballyfermot, a suburb of Dublin, and became well-known among Catholics as a very talented Elvis Presley impersonator. As soon as Walsh showed up at "Our Lady of the Assumption Church," he was put in charge of the altar boys. Within two days, Walsh had his first complaints made against him by the parents of a young boy.

"Walsh was born in 1954, and ordained in 1978. He had been a seminarian in Clonliffe College during which, it emerged years later, he abused children there and at the home of another abuser priest Fr Noel Reynolds, to whose house he had a key. Two days after Walsh took up his first appointment as a priest in July 1978, as curate in Ballyfermot, a complaint was received in Archbishop's House that he had sexually abused an eight-year-old boy. That was alleged to have taken place in June 1978 at Fr Reynolds's house. The next complaint was in 1979 when a mother went to the parish priest of Ballyfermot, the late Canon Val Rogers. Another priest in the parish, Fr Michael Cleary, was dispatched to educate the woman's son on male sexuality. In 1985, Canon Rogers admitted this case had been 'hushed up'."


Though the Catholic Church was aware of the sexual abuse complaints against Walsh, they continued to cover up his crimes for the next 15 years. Worse still, the Catholic Church never informed parents, let alone the police, and their children were put at risk as he continued to visit home after home in Dublin.

(See Genevieve Carbery, "He was in loads of houses in Ballyfermot and nobody knew," Irish Times, Dec 18, 2010, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2MP46It])

Archbishop Connell, presiding over Dublin, held a secret trial, privately done within the confines of the Catholic priesthood, and declared in 1993 that Walsh should be defrocked (i.e. removed from his position as a priest). Walsh pleaded not guilty, even though the evidence was overwhelming and he admitted to over 100 accounts of child sex abuse, and appealed his case to the Vatican; while the Vatican sat on the information, over the course of the next 8 months, Walsh sexually assaulted another child at the funeral of the boy's grandfather.


The Vatican just wanted to throw this guy into a monastery instead of dismissing him from priesthood, but after letters pleading with John Paul II to kick Walsh out, finally, the Vatican approved his dismissal. (For such a well-structured, well-funded organization, it only took them about 20 years to get rid of him.) After losing Catholic protection in 1996, Walsh was finally prosecuted in a state court in 1997.

"In December 1997, Walsh was sentenced to consecutive terms of six years and four years for assaults on six boys. On appeal this became six years. He was in prison until 2001. In December 2010, Walsh's abuse of one boy from 1978 to 1983 was deemed so extreme he was sentenced to a total of 123 years having been found guilty on 13 separate charges. The most lengthy sentence was for 16 years on a single charge. These were concurrent sentences and four years were suspended as a psychologist's report said it was unlikely Walsh would offend again. In 2013, he pleaded guilty to two more cases and in 2015 was convicted by a jury in relation to the sexual abuse of a girl. On Tuesday, he was jailed for seven and half years for raping a boy three times, once with a crucifix. He is now due for release in June 2023."


The point of this story is that Walsh was a product of the Servants of the Paraclete's efforts to rehabilitate and recirculate priests who are sex offenders. Perhaps this is a just a layman's opinion, but the system doesn't seem to be working.
Ultimately, it's not the fleeting attempt at rehabilitation that's the problem; it's the Catholic Church's, Vatican's, and Papacy's lackadaisical, uncaring attitude towards child molesters, and it ultimately comes down to the system of traditions, created by men, in a false religious institution that creates and harbors these criminals. For example, formerly defrocked pedophile priests are being re instituted in the Catholic Church still to this day:

"On 2 January, the Vatican published a letter from Pope Francis to the world's bishops in which he reminded them that they must show 'zero tolerance' towards child abuse. The next day, the American Week magazine published an article that told the story of 'Don Mercedes' — Fr Mauro Inzoli, an Italian priest with a passion for expensive cars and underage boys. In 2012, Pope Benedict stripped Inzoli of his priestly faculties, effectively defrocking him. In 2014, however, they were restored to him — by Pope Francis, who warned him to stay away from minors. Then, finally, the Italian civil authorities caught up with this serial groper of teenagers in the confessional. Last summer Inzoli was sentenced to four years and nine months in jail for paedophile offences. The Vatican, under 'zero-tolerance' Francis, refused to supply evidence that prosecutors wanted."

-Damian Thompson, "Why more and more priests can't stand Pope Francis," The Spectator, Jan 14, 2017, retrieved Aug 16, 2018, [spectator.co.uk/2017/01/why-more-and-more-priests-cant-stand-pope-francis]

The Catholic Church has almost no concern for the victims and the children, and their so-called "zero tolerance" is feigned words that deceive the hearts of those who blindly trust in them.

\[
\text{For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.} \\
\text{-Romans 16:18}
\]

\[
\text{Thus saith the LORD: Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.} \\
\text{-Jeremiah 17:5}
\]

Four Corners, an Australian company that makes documentaries, published details on child sexual abuse in the Catholic Church around Victoria and New South Wales. They documented a meeting of men in Ballarat who call themselves "The Survivors," and most of them are victims of child sex abuse at the hands of Catholic priests.

The documentary is unique in that it covers the large number of suicides, or attempted suicides, that have taken place by men who, when they were boys, were victims of sex abuse in the Catholic Church. Worse still is that their grief over the absence of justice, the cover-up of crimes of these priests by both the Catholic Church, and, in some cases, even the uncaring attitude of police and the courts, are what led up to these men attempting or committing suicide.

"Police are now investigating a possible link between child sexual abuse by Catholic clergy, and at least 40 suicides in Victoria."


The documentary goes on to focus on Damian Jurd, a man who killed himself in 2001 out of grief over the repeated sexual assault he endured as a young boy from a Catholic priest. The media was only legally allowed to call the priest "Father F," but I don't have the same restrictions; thus, I can tell you his name is John J. Farrell. Jurd's parents testified that they didn't know Farrell was raping their son; Damian suddenly went from being a well-behaved child to a mean boy getting into trouble, and eventually ran away from home and got himself involved in criminal activity.

The part I want to highlight is the way the court treated the matter. In 1987, Farrell was arrested for five counts of indecent assault and six counts of sexual intercourse without consent, but the court saw Jurd as a "wayward youth," meaning that he now had a criminal record, and they saw Farrell as an upstanding priest.
"REPORTER: Church authorities did not approach other altar boys they knew could have supported Damian's case. Instead, no expense was spared defending the accused priest. Damian Jurd, now age 15, and with a criminal record, offered his testimony alone.

JURD: 'I said "stop it" and he asked "why?" He kept doing it... He started groaning and he rolled onto his side and he started touching himself... I just buried my head in the pillow, buried my face in the pillow and cried.'

REPORTER: A jury would never hear Damian's evidence. The magistrate decided it would be rejected when set against the word of Father F.

JUDGE: 'He has no previous convictions and he is a Catholic priest... and obviously Damian must come out second best there.'"


Not only was this incredibly embarrassing for a teenage boy to have to come out to talk about, but Farrell got away with it. Farrell was declared innocent on the basis that he was a Catholic priest, and no other investigation took place to question the other boys. Jurd walked away embarrassed having to testify publically what was done to him behind closed doors, embarrassed at the way people looked at him now that he was thought to be a liar, suing against the "oh-so-holy" Catholic Church, and eventually, many years later, he felt the grief and despair were too much to handle; family members came home to find him hanging from the tree in the backyard.

As far as I'm aware, John Farrell has never faced justice for his crimes. Damian Jurd was not the only victim; several other men have come forward to testify that he raped them too, and one of Farrell's victims, Daniel Powell, also killed himself.

Though all these facts may be shocking to some readers, to those of us who are born again in Christ and know the truth of the book of Revelation, they are not shocking. In fact, we expect much more wickedness to come forth out of the Catholic Church because the Bible tells us about their actions in the final days of this world.

#11 – The Great Whore of the Scarlet Beast

In Revelation 17, John is being shown the end of the world and wrath of God poured out upon it. Seven angels pour out vials of God's wrath on the earth.

And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

-Revelation 17:1-2

In this chapter, I'm going to demonstrate that the Great Whore mentioned in Revelation 17 is almost certainly Rome; more specifically, the Roman Catholic Church. As we'll see, there is so much damning evidence for this, that anyone who would deny it is either Catholic and refuses to acknowledge the truth, or sticking their head in the sand because they're afraid of what it would mean.

So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.

-Revelation 17:3

The beast in this passage represents the final global kingdom, which will be ruled over by ten leaders; those ten leaders will then kick out three of them, and an eighth will be added, which will be the final antichrist.

(Read "The Beginner's Guide to Tribulation & Rapture" here at creationliberty.com for more details; See also Daniel 7:7-8 for more details on the horns being the kings of the earth.)
The woman riding this beast would be someone who is in control of the beast. She sits comfortably on top, as would any rider who was on friendly terms with a beast. We're going to look at four basic descriptions in Revelation 17 that will help us clearly identify the Roman Catholic Church as this woman.

1. The Great Whore is a City on Seven Hills

Revelation tells us that the woman is a city:

And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.
-Revelation 17:18

This city sits on location where there are seven mountains, or hills:

The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.
-Revelation 17:9

As far as I'm aware, there are about 83 cities in the world that claim to be on seven hills, which helps narrow our search a bit. These range from Staten Island, New York, to Athens, Greece, to New South Wales, Australia; however, there is one city that is most famously known around the world for being called "The City of Seven Hills," and that is Rome, Italy.


Rome, and Vatican City (which was part of Rome until 1929 when the Catholic Church took over - it still resides within Rome today), are all part of the "Seven Hills" tour that visitors take every year. It's not hard to find this information; just go to any basic search engine, type in "seven hills tour," and many results will appear for Rome and the Vatican.

The book of Daniel predicted all the global empires of the world, and gave specific details about them. These appeared, just as God foretold, in this order:

1. The Babylonian Empire under Nebuchadnezzar
2. The Medo-Persian Empire under Darius
3. The Grecian Empire under Alexander
4. The Roman Empire under Caesar

(See Daniel 7:19-27)
Neither Babylon, Persia, nor Greece claim to be cities set on seven hills, but Rome does, and the Vatican is sitting in the heart of the city of Rome, as the Catholic Encyclopedia states: "It is within the city of Rome, called the city of seven hills, that the entire area of Vatican State proper is now confined." -The Catholic Encyclopedia, Thomas Nelson, 1976, s.v. "Rome."; See also Rory Roybal, Miracles or Magic?, Xulon Press, 2005, p. 30, ISBN: 9781597812504

However, one piece of evidence is not enough. Before jumping to conclusions, let's continue to look at more evidence in Scripture to identify the Great Whore.

2. The Great Whore Dresses in Purple & Scarlet with a Golden Cup in Hand

And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication:
-Revelation 17:4

Of the 80+ cities that sit on seven hills, only one is known for adorning themselves in purple and scarlet (red). One would think that more Catholics might have their eyes opened to the truth, but not only are most brainwashed with a cultic mentality, meaning that they are never willing to even consider that the Catholic Church could be evil, but as we read earlier, they are dissuaded from studying the Bible for themselves.

The golden cup of abomination is also clear to see:
abomination (n): defilement, pollution, evil doctrines and practices which are moral
defilements, idols and idolatry
(See 'abomination', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828,
retrieved Aug 23, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

The abomination is what we covered in Chapter 3, concerning the Catholic Mass and Eucharist. Though Christ's blood sacrifice was done once for the sins of all, the Catholic Church makes the people drink "blood" (through transubstantiation) out of a golden cup, and the "abomination" spoken of in verse 4 is this defilement of that which is truly a holy thing; in other words, Christ's blood saves once for all, but Catholic "blood" pollutes and defiles that which Christ did on the cross.

The book of 1 Corinthians, in chapter 10, helps explain this abomination further:

Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.

1 Corinthians 10:4

This explains to us that the Hebrews who followed the Lord God out of the captivity of Egypt also followed Christ because Christ and God are one. (John 10:30) Their salvation was by grace alone through faith alone, not of works; just as we have in this dispensation under Christ, but the Catholic Church teaches in opposition to this doctrine because they are idolaters, just as those who were destroyed at Mount Sinai and in the wilderness.

But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition [reproof], upon whom the ends of the world are come.

1 Corinthians 10:5-11

These things were written as a warning to us, not to turn unto fornication with idols, but many have turned to the Catholic Church and their idols in defiance against God. The Catholic Church generally approves of these verses:

Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry. I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

1 Corinthians 10:14-17

Notice that the commandment to flee from idolatry comes right before the part about communion in the bread and drink. This is no coincidence. Though the Catholic Church likes the above verses, they typically reject the verses of warning that follow because they will not consider the fact that we are warned to flee from the idolatry of men like those who rule over the Catholic Church:

Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar? What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing? But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils. Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

1 Corinthians 10:18-21

The golden cup of the Catholic Mass is the cup of devils.
Revelation also tells us the Great Whore is decked (i.e. covered) with pearls and precious stones, which is not a foreign concept to the popes of Rome. The higher up a priest goes in the hierarchy of the Catholic Church, his garb becomes more elaborate, fancy, and expensive.

3. The Great Whore is a Harlot Who Fornicates with Kings

And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.
- Revelation 17:5

There are many people who have misunderstood, and created false doctrines from, the phrase "Mystery Babylon," but in a nutshell, the mystery of Babylon is that the people worshiped false gods, and after God separated their languages (Gen 11:9), they continued to worship their false gods, but now they all call those gods by different names. The purpose of Rome is to bring all those gods back under one unity again, like in the days of Babel, and that is why it is known as "Mystery Babylon."

As we learned in Chapter 1, Rome and the Catholic Church has had a long-standing history of merging pagan traditions and religious institutions under one umbrella. This would be the act of spiritual harlotry:

harlot (n): a woman who prostitutes her body for hire; in Scripture, one who forsakes the true God and worships idols
(See 'harlot', American Dictionary of the English Language, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Aug 17, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

Lest thou make a covenant with the inhabitants of the land, and they go a whoring after their gods, and do sacrifice unto their gods, and one call thee, and thou eat of his sacrifice;
- Exodus 34:15

Thou hast also committed fornication with the Egyptians thy neighbours, great of flesh; and hast increased thy whoredoms, to provoke me to anger.
- Ezekiel 16:26

Don't misunderstand; a city cannot strip down its clothing and have sexual intercourse with another city. That's nonsensical. The context of whoredom is an analogy, which is a comparison between two things to explain a matter. A whore is someone who, for the sake of money and/or power, forsakes God's authority and commandments concerning marriage and commits fornication; thus, the analogy is that the city in general, for the sake of money and power, forsakes God's authority and commandments concerning idolatry, which is following after false gods. Just as most Israelites claim they are of God, but follow after idols and traditions of men, so too do Catholics claim to be of Christ while following after idols and traditions of men, making them cities of spiritual fornication.
If you have read all the previous chapters, the harlotry and abominations committed by the Roman Catholic Church should not be difficult to understand at this point. When a city is said to commit fornication, it is speaking generally in the spiritual sense, and leads us to conclude that the Great Whore is a city that is well-known for its religious institutions, which perfectly fits Rome.

For example, Jerusalem is recognized worldwide as a spiritual city, and is often called "The Holy City;" in the Bible, the Jews were chosen by God to represent Him and His Word in their nation, and in this city. The Jews committed fornication with other gods, and have become as a harlot (Isa 1:21), but this cannot be the city talked about in Revelation 17 because it is not built on seven hills. In the same manner, Mecca is a so-called "holy city" according to Muslims, but it does not rest on seven hills either.

(Read "Islam: Religion of Terror" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

A Catholic would argue that the Vatican sits slightly off the central seven hills location, across the river to the east; however, that's only because the Pope and priests were kicked out during the Italian Revolution in the 19th century. The Vatican was gifted to the Roman Catholic Church by Italy in the 20th century (as we'll see shortly), and with their massive wealth, the Catholic Church is slowly buying up property all throughout Italy, including Rome.

Many churchgoers are willingly blind and blissfully ignorant of the Catholic Church's strong push to unify all religions under Rome leadership. I document some of the more recent efforts in a teaching we have called, "Pope Francis's Deceptive John 17 Movement," and I would encourage readers to check out the article and videos with it to get all the information. Thus, the Catholic Church is not only committing spiritual fornication, but is also keeping alive the spirit of the Roman Empire, bringing all people under their authority.

The following video is a news report from 2008:

**International Catholic Meeting "Prayer for Peace"**

https://youtu.be/I_we1rpe7b0

REPORTER: "The International Prayer for Peace in Cyprus... began with a Eucharistic celebration in the Holy Cross Catholic Church in Nicosia [capital city of Cyprus], presided over by Cardinal Leonardo Sandri, prefect [chief officer] of the Congregation of the Oriental Churches. The meeting is entitled, 'A Civilization of Peace: Faiths and Cultures in Dialogue,' and will conclude on Tuesday, November 18th. Representatives of Christian [i.e. Catholic and Catholic-supporting] churches and ecclesial communities attended the Eucharistic celebration. In his homily [sermon], Cardinal Sandri underlined that hospitality, patience, and hope are the sure ways of cultivating the true talent of religions, and recalled that all religions are an extraordinary, vital force for humanity, as long as each religion is open to truth. Finally, the prefect for the Oriental Churches said that Christianity [i.e. Catholicism] is a gift for Europe and for the world, given that it aims towards the development of each man and woman in their historical and eternal vocation."

This is the Catholic Church's continued effort to bring all religious leaders under Rome's leadership, calling all wicked, pagan religious cults around the world "an extraordinary, vital force." Keep in mind that it is not Christianity they believe is a "gift for the world," it is Catholicism they believe is a gift for the world, and their "eternal vocation" will be hell and the lake of fire.

*But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.*

-Revelation 21:8

(Read "Hell Is Real And Many People Are Going There" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)
The following is a 2008 news report, two days later in Cyprus, of an international meeting of religious leaders, another Catholic effort, disguised as “peace,” to unify all religious leaders under Rome's banner:

International Summit "Prayer for Peace" Cyprus 2008
https://youtu.be/ckVlXhHHXMU

**REPORTER:** "Mario Marazziti, spokesperson of the Community of Sant'egidio [Catholic Church that focuses on world peace] that organizes one of the most significant world encounters between religions, explains the value of religion in a world in crisis from the Mediterranean island of Cyprus."

**MARAZZITI:** "Religions help discover what is important in life, that is, to work for a world with more justice. Here, we must once more learn to live with other religions because, when you are in crisis, each person is tempted to think only of himself, and to see the other as an enemy; a competitor. Religions have the ability to give hope to men and women of our time. We should work for a different world because it seems like we are in the aftermath of a world war that is not yet finished."

**REPORTER:** "The city of Nicosia is showing great enthusiasm for this encounter that represents a further step towards peace, and that the Community of Sant'egidio has organized since 1987, after the World Day of Prayer in Assisi [Italy] composed by John Paul II on Oct 22, 1986."

For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief.

-1 Thessalonians 5:2-4

In the video, all sorts of wicked religions from around the world had representatives at this meeting. They're all having dialogue to find how they can compromise and work together under the same yoke, but for those who have been born again in the Lord Jesus Christ, we are to be sanctified (i.e. set apart) by the truth of God's Word, and not to be yoked together with the world:

_Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth._
- John 17:17

_Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay [No]; but rather division:_
- Luke 12:51

(Read “The Biblical Understanding of Sanctification” here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

_Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? [i.e. one who does not believe Scripture] And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty._
- 2 Corinthians 6:14-18
In Chapter 7, we briefly covered John Paul II's large meeting of religions to pray for peace. They had Buddhists, Hindus, Muslims, and many other varieties of religions from all around the world in one big perversion against God, and as we see in the above news reports, these meetings are still taking place. More religions have joined in with this abomination since that time. The only religion in this world not represented in those meeting are those us who are the children of the Living God, born again in His Son, Jesus Christ, because we are taught to be sanctified away from the wicked traditions of this world.

*Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.*

- 1 John 2:15-17

However, it's not just religious leaders that Rome is trying to put under their umbrella, it's also countries and governments, as the Bible tells us the Great Whore will reign over kings:

*And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.*

-Revelation 17:18

If you took at a close look at the 80+ cities that sit on seven hills, among those who are considered religious cities, there is one, and ONLY one, that has ever been known to reign over kings, and that is the Roman Catholic Church. The Catholic Church has a well-known, long-standing history of kings fearing the rule of the Roman Papacy.

*Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.*

- John 18:36

One day soon, Christ will rule over this world, but for now, his servants are commanded not to make physical war with the world:

*For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds; Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;*  

-2 Corinthians 10:4-5

However, the Catholic Church has defied Christ's authority and made war with the world using the carnal weapons of warfare; the Crusades and the Office of Inquisition alone should be more than enough proof of that. The Catholic Empire has amassed property, wealth, and influence to the point that they rival just about any other empire in history. The Catholic Church has engaged in partnerships with emperors and kings, and have been fornicating with the kings of the earth in a shared bed throughout the last 1700 years.

For example, Pope Gregory VII (1073-1085) published an official outline (*Dictatus Papae*) of what, according to Catholicism, the powers of the Papacy are, and here are some of the points listed in the document (and these are direct quotes):

- "The Roman Church was founded solely by God."
- "All princes shall kiss the feet of the Pope alone."
- "His name alone shall be spoken in the churches."
- "This is the only name in the world."
- "It may be permitted to him to depose emperors."
- "A sentence passed by him may be retracted by no one."
- "He himself may be judged by no one."
- "No one shall dare to condemn any person who appeals to the Apostolic Chair. [i.e. The Pope]"
- "The Roman Church has never erred. Nor will it err, to all eternity."
- "He who is not at peace with the Roman Church shall not be considered 'catholic'."
- "He may absolve subjects from their fealty to wicked men."

Based on everything we've learned so far in this book, these are lies, but again, this is just demonstrating what Catholicism teaches, and once again, I say to Catholics that you cannot be a part of the Catholic Church unless you submit yourself to all these beliefs. I've met some Catholics who would be very uncomfortable with these statements, but they just ignore them and try not to think about it so they won't have to suffer for the truth of God's Word. (i.e. They choose their pope over Christ because there's no persecution or tribulation involved.)

Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.

-Acts 14:22

The line that says that the Pope may "absolve subjects from their fealty to wicked men" is talking about the subjects of servants to their lords. In this context, it means that those who have sworn an oath of loyalty to a king may be absolved of that oath if the Pope declares the king to be wicked and deposes him (i.e. forcefully removes him from office), but please keep in mind that a pope would have no need to depose a ruler unless he/she defied the authority of the Catholic Church.

When Pope Gregory VII wrote, "It may be permitted to him [the Pope] to depose emperors," this was no idle statement or call to impress. This is meant literally, and the evidence speaks for itself. The following list is a few examples of popes who have kicked kings off their thrones:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>YEAR</th>
<th>CATHOLIC POPE</th>
<th>DEPOSED KING</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1076</td>
<td>Gregory VII</td>
<td>Henry IV of Rome</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1160</td>
<td>Alexander III</td>
<td>Frederick I of Rome</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1245</td>
<td>Innocent IV</td>
<td>Frederick II of Rome</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1283</td>
<td>Martin IV</td>
<td>Peter III of Aragon*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1303</td>
<td>Boniface VIII</td>
<td>Philip IV of France</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1512</td>
<td>Julius II</td>
<td>Louis XII of France</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1570</td>
<td>Pius V</td>
<td>Elizabeth I of England</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1585</td>
<td>Sixtus V</td>
<td>Henry III of Navarre**</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(* = Aragon was a territory in what is now known as Spain, along with some western Mediterranean islands.)

(** = Navarre was also in the territory known today as Spain, a small kingdom next to Aragon.)

I'm sure by now, readers can begin to see the Catholic Church, or Rome, as a great city "which reigneth over the kings of the earth." For many centuries, the rulers of Europe and many other countries around the world, knew not to question or oppose the Roman Pontiff in any way, else they would lose their crown.
In 1229, Pope Gregory IX created a papal bull (i.e. formal document) called In Coena Domini (in supper) to be read at Catholic Masses at different times throughout the year. By 1372, the Papacy, through this document, had declared papal authority over the entire world, and excommunicated all those who would not obey the popes and pay them taxes. Pope Julius II gave In Coena Domini the reinforcement of law, and it was heavily applied during the reign of Pope Pius V in 1568, forbidding rulers to "receive or to correspond with non-Catholics... prohibited any appeal to council from the decisions of Rome... forbade taxation of the clergy without the permission of the pope... prohibited secular courts from exercising jurisdiction over members of the upper clergy," and all appeals made to local courts were to be readdressed to Rome for judgement.


In fact, this was the reason for the beginning of the Anglican Church, or the Church of England. Don't misunderstand, the Anglicans are exactly the same as the Catholic Church and do the same abominations; the only difference between them is political, meaning that the Anglicans won't recognize the Pope as the highest authority. It is well-documented history that Henry VIII started the Anglicans in the 16th century, and declared himself leader over the Anglican Church (very similar to how Constantine started the Roman Catholics), all because the Pope wouldn't let him get a divorce.

(See Cathy Caridi, "If the Church Has Never Permitted Divorce, Why Did Henry VIII Expect the Pope to Give Him One?" Canon Law Made Easy, June 23, 2016, retrieved Aug 24, 2018, [canonlawmadeeasy.com/2016/06/23/church-never-permitted-divorce-henry-viii])

Though some people think this was a long time ago, far, far away, because the Catholic Church lost a lot of its political power during the 19th century Italian revolution, which drove out the papacy, the popes of Rome continue to this day to expand their authority over the rulers of nations. For example, the Pope allied with Italian Prime Minister (and fascist dictator) Benito Mussolini in 1929 after decades of war against the Italian armies; not only did Mussolini give the Catholic Church the Vatican (which is today the smallest nation in the world at 109 acres sitting in the midst of Rome), but he also gave them a huge cash payout to gain their favor.

The concordat (i.e. pact or agreement) between the Pope of Rome and King of Italy states that not only did the Catholic Church obtain the Vatican as their own country, but they were also paid almost a billion lire (Italian currency):

"Article 1. Italy, on the exchange of ratifications [agreements] of the Treaty, shall pay to the Holy See the sum of Italian lire 750,000,000 (seven hundred and fifty millions) and at the same time sonsign Italian 5 per cent bonds (with coupons [certificates], June 30) of the nominal value of Italian lire 1,000,000.

Article 2. The Holy See declares that it accepts the above as a definite systemization of the financial relations with Italy in consequence of the events of 1870.

Article 3. All the acts necessary for the execution of the Treaty with regard to the present Convention and of the Concordat shall be exempt from every form of taxation."

In case you may not have understood, the Italian government agreed to pay the Catholic Church 750 million lire in cash, and another million in bonds, which they accepted as restitution for damages to their property during the Italian revolution. (Because in the Catholic mindset, the Pope must be appeased; he kneels to no king or court.) On top of that, the Italian government declared that the Catholic Church would no longer have to pay taxes, which is a clear demonstration of the Catholic Church reigning over the kings of the earth, and getting special treatment from them.

Four years later, the Catholic Church signed a similar concordant with Adolf Hitler called the Reichskonkordat. The Catholic Church received a lot of title and privilege with this concordat, and Article 16 states the following: "Before bishops take possession of their dioceses [administration] they are to take an oath of fealty either to the Reich representative of the state concerned, or to the President of the Reich, according to the following formula: Before God and on the Holy Gospels I swear and promise, as becomes a bishop, loyalty to the German Reich and to the State of... I swear and promise to honor the legally constituted government and to cause the clergy of my diocese to honor it. In the performance of my spiritual office and in my solicitude for the welfare and the interests of the German Reich, I will endeavor to avoid all detrimental acts which might endanger it."


Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

-Matthew 5:33-37

(Read "God Does Not Justify Lies" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Investigative reporter John Cornwell was published in Vanity Fair for his research on the truth behind a long-held accusation against Pope Pius XII (Eugenio Pacelli) that he had helped Hitler and the Nazis achieve their goal because Nazism was in line with Catholic goals. Cornwell's original plan was to prove that Pius XII did not support the Nazis, and that Pius was not guilty of what he had been accused of, but after being granted access to hidden files in the Vatican's archives in the late 90s, spending weeks in study, he discovered that not only was Pius XII anti-Jew, he also worked together with the Nazis to quell all resistance against the Catholic Church:

"By the middle of 1997, I was in a state of moral shock... The evidence was explosive. It showed for the first time that Pacelli [Pius XII] was patently [clearly, without doubt], and by the proof of his own words, anti-Jewish. It revealed that he had helped Hitler to power and at the same time undermined potential Catholic resistance in Germany. It showed that he had implicitly denied and trivialized the Holocaust, despite having reliable knowledge of its true extent. And, worse, that he was a hypocrite, for after the war he had retrospectively taken undue credit for speaking out boldly against the Nazis' persecution of the Jews. [i.e. Pius lied about it to make himself look good after the Nazis lost the war.]


Even more recently, the pope's alliance with Ronald Regan and the CIA helped demonstrate the hidden extent of the carnal Catholic empire. Secretary of State Alexander Haig commented on the Vatican's help in official investigations, saying, "The Vatican's information was absolutely better and quicker than ours in every respect."


The Vatican liaison to the White House, Archbishop Pio Laghi, a Vatican diplomat (i.e. "Apostolic Nuncio"), told American intelligence officials:

"Listen to the Holy Father. We have 2000 years experience of this."

He's not wrong; the Catholic Church has had almost 1700 years of experience in political espionage (i.e. spying), overthrowing governments and deposing kings. It's no great surprise that intelligence agencies look to the Catholic Church as a shining example for political intrigue (i.e. secret planning) and espionage, especially when they have powerful political influence over just about every leader in every country across the known world.

U.N. Assistant Secretary General Robert Muller said:

"I really wish that someday a book containing the U.N. [United Nations] speeches of the 2 Popes... might be published for worldwide distribution. The result would be a kind of Bible for modern times... The Holy See has become so close to the U.N. When I read documents emanating from the Holy See... I sometimes have the impression that I'm reading U.N. documents."


Is there another city that is on seven hills, that is known for the colors of purple and scarlet, that is also known for a golden cup of abomination, that has committed spiritual fornication and ruled over the kings of the earth to a greater degree than the Roman Catholic Church? Nothing else comes even remotely close. The evidence for "reigning over the kings of the earth" is overwhelming, but the next point will drive the final nail in the coffin.

### 4. The Great Whore is Drunk with the Blood of the Saints

*And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.*

-Revelation 17:6

Please don't misunderstand the use of the word 'admiration' here, because it is often today taken to mean great love and respect, but the word also can be used to mean wonder with disapproval, like in terms of wrongs done, which would be the context of this verse. The apostle of Christ would never love and respect those drenched in the blood of the saints of God, and the admiration he had was a wonder that this woman, appearing to be calm and gentle outwardly, would be riding comfortably atop such a vicious beast.

As we covered in Chapter 8 on the Inquisition, the Catholic Church is well-known for being drunk with the blood of the born again saints of God. Just because the Catholic Church has somewhat eased up on its rule after they lost some of their power in the 19th century, doesn't mean their "Mother Church" is not thirsty for more blood from God's elect.

Earlier, I briefly mentioned Mary Tudor, Queen of England from 1553 to 1558, who was a dedicated follower of the Catholic Church. This was a time of great persecution against the born again Christians at the hand of the Catholic Inquisitors, and Mary followed the lead of the wicked popes of Rome by executing born again Christians, earning herself the nickname "Bloody Mary."

For example, in 1555, John Hooper was imprisoned by Bloody Mary on the grounds that he owed her money, even though he didn't owe her anything; it was just an excuse to imprison him. The real reason she had Hooper rounded up was because he refused to preach the sacraments of the Eucharist in the Catholic mass, so they arrested him and threw him into a sewer dungeon, filled with foul-smelling sewage we couldn't image, and he contracted many illnesses over the course of the next five months he spent in that cell.
Hooper was called before a Catholic council of bishops:

"The bishop of Winchester urged Hooper to forsake the 'evil and corrupt doctrine,' as he called it... and to return to the unity of the Catholic Church and acknowledge the pope as head of that church... If Hooper would bow to the pope's holiness, Winchester assured him that he would receive the pope's blessing, and the Queen's mercy... Hooper answer that insasmuch as the pope taught doctrine that was altogether contrary to the doctrine of Christ, he was not worthy to be head of the church, and so he would in no way give in to any such illegal authority. Further, he said, the Roman Catholic Church is not the true Church at all. The true Church only hears the voice of her spouse and flees from the voice of strangers. 'However,' he said, 'if there is any point that I don't know about in which I have offended the queen's majesty, I will most humbly submit myself to her mercy,'... The bishop answered that the queen would show no mercy to the Pope's enemies."


Indeed, Bloody Mary ordered Hooper's execution because he would not bow to the Pope of Rome. Based on the eye-witness reports, here are his last moments while being burned alive:

"Hooper prayed in a somewhat loud voice, 'Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me. Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me. Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.' These were the last words he was heard to speak. But even when his mouth was black and his tongue swollen, his lips could still be seen moving in prayer until they shrunk back into his gums. During these moments, Hooper struck repeatedly at his chest, or heart, with his hands until one of his arms fell off, and then continued striking his chest with the other hand while fat, water, and blood spurted out his fingertips. When the flames suddenly flared up in great power, Hooper struck his chest only once more as his strength gave out and his hand stuck to the iron band around his chest. At the same moment, his body fell forward against the band and he gave up his spirit."


Never in history has a vile, antichrist pope ever given up himself for the sake of Christ like Hooper did. Never did those lofty bishops sacrifice themselves for the sake of Christ; they were far too busy commanding their minions to polish their finely crafted thrones.

Another example is John Rogers, who, for a time, was a servant of William Tyndale, one of the translators that preceded the King James Bible translators. After growing in knowledge of God's Word in English, Rogers sanctified himself from the Pope of Rome, knowing that seat to be that of an antichrist. Rogers was permitted to preach the truth of God's Word after King Edward the VI (1547-1553) kicked the Pope out of England, but once Bloody Mary took the throne, the wicked bishops of Rome started hunting Christians in England again, and Rogers was one of their victims. (See The Great Apostacy; Or, the Church of Rome Proved to be Not the Church of Christ, Hamilton, Adams & Company, 1839, p. 465-466, [The British Library])

After being called to preach in a building where there were many Catholic bishops, teaching that the people should abstain from all which had to do with the wicked Roman Pontiff, the bishops addressed Rogers during his preaching, but his answer with the Scripture embarrassed them in front of a viewing audience. As soon as Bloody Mary issued a decree to stop all Biblical preaching, Rogers was arrested, and thrown in a prison reserved for murderers and thieves.

Rogers was sentenced to execution, and here's how the conversation went between Rogers and the bishop under whose authority he was held captive:

"ROGERS RESPONDING TO HIS CHARGES: Well, my lord, here I stand before God and you, and all this honourable audience, I take him to witness, that I never wittingly [with full knowledge; deliberately] or willingly taught any false doctrine; and therefore have I a good conscience before God and all good men. I am sure that you and I shall come before a judge that is righteous, before whom I shall be as good a man as you: and I nothing doubt but I shall be found there a true member of the true catholic church [lower case 'c' catholic church means 'whole' or "universal," which is separate from the captical 'C' Catholic Church, which is a corporate entity of Rome], and everlastingly saved. And as for your false church, you need not to excommunicate me from it. I have not been in it these twenty years, the Lord be thanked therefor. But now you have done what you can, my lord, I pray you yet grant me one thing.

BISHOP: What is that?

ROGERS: That my poor wife, being a stranger [foreign to the area], may come and speak with me so long as I live. For she hath ten children that are hers and mine, and I would somewhat counsel her, what were best for her to do.

BISHOP: No, she is not thy wife.

ROGERS: Yes, my lord, and has been these eighteen years.

BISHOP: Should I grant her to be thy wife?

ROGERS: Choose you whether you will or not, she shall be so nevertheless.
BISHOP: She shall not come at thee.

ROGERS: Then I have tried out all your charity. You make yourself highly displeased with the matrimony of priests [i.e. the Catholic Church prevents priests from marrying], but you maintain open concubinage [not a wife; a mistress living with a man in fornication]: as in Wales, where every priest has his concubine openly dwelling with him, even as your holy father [the Pope] suffers all the priests in Holland and in France to do the like."

(See The Great Apostacy; Or, the Church of Rome Proved to be Not the Church of Christ, Hamilton, Adams & Company, 1839, p. 467, [The British Library])

In short, the Catholic Bishop refused to acknowledge the marriage between Rogers and his wife, but lived in hypocrisy by openly keeping whores in their homes, living in fornication. Sadly, that evil spirit of Rome has seeped its way into typical church buildings, where marriages are not recognized unless approved by a "pastor," even though Scripture gives no such commandment or implication.

(Read "Marriage: What Christians Should Know" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

After being imprisoned a lengthy time, Rogers was taken before a priest named Bonner, and he made one request to Bonner:

"And Bonner asking him what that should be, 'Nothing,' said he, 'but that he might talk a few words with his wife before his burning.' But that could not be obtained of him! [i.e. the Catholic preist refused] Now when the time came, that he, having been delivered to the sheriffs, was brought out of Newgate to Smithfield, the place of his execution, Master Woodroofe, one of the sheriffs, calling Master [i.e. the word is used in the sense of a teacher] Rogers to him, asked him if he would revoke his abominable doctrine, and his evil opinion of the sacrament of the altar. Master Rogers answered and said, 'That which I have preached I will seal with my blood.' 'Then,' said Master Woodroofe, 'thou art an heretic.' 'That shall be known,' replied Rogers, 'at the day of judgment.' 'Well,' said Master Woodroofe, 'I will never pray for thee.' 'But I will pray for you,' rejoined Rogers."

(See The Great Apostacy; Or, the Church of Rome Proved to be Not the Church of Christ, Hamilton, Adams & Company, 1839, p. 468, [The British Library])

In the carriage on the way to his execution, Rogers passed by his wife and ten children, and he saw them. However, their faces did not dissuade him from his dedication to the Lord Jesus Christ (i.e. Rogers trusted in the Living God to care for his family), and even though papers were brought for him to sign, which would be a confession of allegiance to the Pope of Rome in exchange for his life, Rogers stood firm on the Word of God, and was executed by the Great Whore who bathes in the blood of the saints of God.

He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

-Matthew 10:37

Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

-2 Timothy 3:12

There are many more examples of these martyrs in Chapter 8 on the Inquisition. The point has already been clearly made that the Catholic Church, and her vicious popes, have always hated the born again saints of Christ, and even though the Catholic Church tries to create their own version of "saints," they are false, as they have always been, drinking the blood of the true saints of Christ from the cup of devils.

To summarize, the Great Whore riding atop the beast has the following four descriptions:

1. She is a City on Seven Hills
2. She Dresses in Purple & Scarlet with a Golden Cup in Hand
3. She is a Harlot Who Fornicates with Kings and Reigns Over Them
4. She is Drunk with the Blood of the Saints

There is no other entity in this world that better and more accurately fits all these descriptions than the Catholic Church. This is not to say that the final antichrist, the son of perdition, will be Catholic, but that son of perdition will claim the ecumenical seat of Rome, and it is this Great Whore who will control the beast in the final days; thus, I urge all Christians not to worry, or be troubled, but to be watchful, and to preach the truth of God's Word on a strong foundation of Christ until the Day of Judgment.
I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom; Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.

-2 Timothy 4:1-5

#12 – A Final Message for Catholics

Before I begin this final message to Catholics, I want to show them one of the churches approved and used by the Catholic Church. It's called the Sedlec Ossuary, which was originally a building used to bury people, but over the course of a few hundred years, it was turned into a structure decorated with the bones of 40,000 people, in which is also a Catholic altar where Eucharistic services are held.

The following are images from this Catholic Church, provided on their official website; click the image to get a larger view:

Do you honestly believe that this represents the Lord Jesus Christ, or that He would approve of it? If your answer is "Yes," then you do not believe in the Christian God of the Bible because the men who would build and approve of such a wicked structure do not love God.

But he that sinneth against me wortheth his own soul: all they that hate me love death.

-Proverbs 8:36
Over the years, I've often been accused of being "anti-Catholic," which is a common one-liner, quick-response phrase Catholics are taught to say against anyone who is at odds with the Catholic Church. I am not anti-Catholic, I am for the truth of God's Word, and against error, lies, and false doctrines. If Catholics would fix their errors, lies, and false doctrines, repenting of all their wicked deeds and traditions, like transubstantiation, the Eucharist, the false authority of popes, works-based doctrines, purgatory, and every other sin and crime that is bred in Catholicism, then I would have no problem with the Catholic Church, but after 1700 years of wickedness, they will not get better; they will only get worse.

And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

-Matthew 3:10

Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

-Matthew 7:15-20

However, if you as a Catholic (or Anglican, or Eastern Orthodox, or any other flavor in between) do not repent (i.e. have grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing) for the false doctrines and traditions of men, and come to the Lord Jesus Christ through grace alone and faith alone, you will not enter the Kingdom of God, and will end up in hell after you face the judgment of God. If you want to claim that the wicked traditions of the Catholic Church are "Christian," then you are anti-Christian because you are against all that is of Christ, and I plead with you that, for the sake of your soul, to pray to the Lord God that He would give you repentance to acknowledge the truth.

(Read "Is Repentance Part of Salvation?" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

-2 Timothy 2:25-26

And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth [i.e. the Bible], that they might be saved.

-2 Thessalonians 2:10

Sanctify them [i.e. divide them apart to a holy use] through thy truth: thy word [i.e the Bible] is truth.

-John 17:17

A priest cannot save you. Mary cannot save you, and she has never heard a single prayer from anyone. Jesus even said the prayers you say in vain repetition (e.g. Hail Marys, Our Fathers, etc) are not heard:

But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

-Matthew 6:7

There is only one way to get to the Father, and that is through Jesus Christ alone, in faith of His grace alone:

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

-John 14:6

For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus:

-1 Timothy 2:5

ASK YOURSELF: "Am I following the Word of God, or the traditions of men?"

The Bible tells us that the traditions of men nullify the effect of God's Word on the hearers, and that many men will seek to turn you rotten through their traditions.
Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.
-Matthew 15:6

Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.
-Colossians 2:8

ASK YOURSELF: "If I follow the Word of God, have I proved it?"

A Catholic is taught that the traditions of the Catholic Church come from the Word of God, but that is not the truth. Did you go to the Word of God and prove the Scripture?

Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.
-1 Thessalonians 5:21

And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither went into the synagogue of the Jews. These were more noble [virtuous, excellent] than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.
-Acts 17:10-11

ASK YOURSELF: "Do I trust in God the Father, or a priest I call 'father'?

The Lord Jesus Christ gave His followers specific instructions to not call men "father" in the spiritual sense, which is what the Catholic Church teaches. God also taught us that, concerning His Word, those who put their trust in men have departed from God.

And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.
-Matthew 23:9

Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.
-Jeremiah 17:5

ASK YOURSELF: "Do I believe I can earn my way to heaven through works/suffering?"

The Bible makes it clear that no man can enter heaven by their own efforts. One can only enter the Kingdom of God through the free gift of the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and Jesus only offers that gift of grace to those who repent (i.e. grief and godly sorrow) in humility for their sin and believe on His one-time blood sacrifice payment for their sins forever.

That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.
-Ephesians 2:7-10

The salvation we receive from Christ leads us to do good works, and live according to His commandments, not the other way around. Works do not lead us to salvation. In Chapter 3 on the Mass/Eucharist, we saw that the Catholic Church teaches that the priests offer sacrifices on an almost daily basis, but the Lord God has told us that can NEVER take away sins.
And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: But this man [i.e. Jesus Christ], after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.  
-Hebrews 10:11-14

ASK YOURSELF: "Am I unwilling or nervous to question the Catholic Church?"

If there is unwillingness, then there is the sin of pride, and if there is a nervousness, that is a fear of man that is not of God, which brings a snare.

_The fear of man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the LORD shall be safe._  
-Proverbs 29:25

_Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?_  
-2 Corinthians 13:5

_For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged._  
-1 Corinthians 11:31

The Catholic Church is teaching all these false doctrines because they have the devilish spirit of Rome in them, which drives continually towards an ecumenical, one-world religion and government. In the end, despite what some Catholics want to claim, the Catholic Church teaches and believes that all men are destined to salvation despite their beliefs, and that no one will end up in hell, as Pope John Paul II stated in _Redemptoris Missio:_

"The Church's universal mission is born of faith in Jesus Christ, as is stated in our Trinitarian profession of faith: 'I believe in one Lord, Jesus Christ, the only Son of God, eternally begotten of the Father... For us men and for our salvation he came down from heaven: by the power of the Holy spirit he became incarnate from the Virgin Mary, and was made man.' The redemption event brings salvation to all, 'for each one is included in the mystery of the redemption and with each one Christ has united himself forever through this mystery.' It is only in faith that the Church's mission can be understood and only in faith that it finds its basis... Newness of life in him is the 'Good News' for men and women of every age: all are called to it and destined for it. Indeed, all people are searching for it, albeit at times in a confused way, and have a right to know the value of this gift and to approach it freely."


The Bible tells us that all people are _NOT_ searching for God and Christ; in fact, the Bible tells us _NO ONE_ searches for Him. The Lord God has to come to us in our helpless state and give us understanding, and He does that only with those who are humble of heart:

_As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one._  
-Romans 3:10-12

_But he giveth more grace. Wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble._  
-James 4:6

In addition to that, there are _MANY_ who will call Jesus "Lord," but will not enter the Kingdom of God:

_Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven._  
-Matthew 7:21
These people would not listen to the commandments and doctrine of Christ, but they would listen to a priest or pastor fill them with the traditions of men and follow them. Therefore, when they approach Christ and try to justify themselves, they'll give Him a long list of their works, which they believed would grant them entrance to heaven:

**Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.**

-Matthew 7:22-23

Many will claim to know Christ, and call Him "Lord," but their names are not written in the book of life, and they will be cast into the lake of fire which burns for all eternity, never to escape:

*And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.*

-Revelation 20:15

However, there's a major contradiction because whereas the general teaching of the popes of Rome is that hell doesn't exist, and that all will be saved in the end, other major Catholic organizations, like Catholic Answers, a very popular Catholic publication, says that no one can be sure if they have salvation:

"Do I have a particular assurance of salvation or damnation or what? The answer a Catholic would have to give is: No. And the Catholic position is that an assurance of salvation is not possible."

-Catholic Layman Karl Keating, founder of Catholic Answers. Debate between Peter Ruckman and Karl Keating, Bayview Baptist Church, retrieved Aug 28, 2018, [youtu.be/6yWc1C-fxw0?t=8m]

And I agree; a Catholic assurance of salvation is not possible because they base it on their own works, or rather, their own "inner righteousness." Under a system where you have to earn your way to heaven, no one knows how much work has to be done to get there, and thus, belief no assurance is, at the very least, an honest answer from the Catholic perspective.

However, we who are the born again children of God, know that we have eternal life, and have a definite assurance of it:

**These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God: that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.**

-1 John 5:13

**For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.**

-Romans 8:38-39

These Catholic leaders, priests, bishops, popes, and all other flavors in between are not entering the Kingdom of God, and they travel across land and sea in search of converts to their religion, to make the next generation far more the children of hell than themselves. Meanwhile, they take money from widows, make grand sanctimonious prayers to be seen among men. In short, they're not entering Heaven, and they won't allow anyone else to enter either, which is exactly what the scribes and Pharisees in Christ's day were doing:

**But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence [for show] make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass [travel] sea and land to make one proselyte [convert to a religion], and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.**

-Matthew 23:13-15

But sadly, the grand majority of Catholics will not believe what I tell them, nor search out the matter to find the truth because they cling to the Devil and his Roman religion:

**Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.**

-John 8:44-45
Of course, most Catholics will be offended by this, claiming that they believe on Jesus, and likewise, claiming that they are not of the devil. However, those Catholics typically have no understanding of these verses, and don’t know that Jesus was speaking to a whole crowd of people who believed on Him:

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.  
-John 8:31-32

A few Catholics may be willing to question their religion, and to seek out the truth of a matter in Scripture, but they still fear men, specifically their friends and family. Since most Catholics grow up around other Catholics, anyone who departs from the Catholic Church for the Word of God is generally shunned, and I've heard testimony of it happening from many Christians; however, Jesus told us we were to love God more than anyone or anything:

And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.  
-Mark 12:30

For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man’s foes shall be they of his own household.  
He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.  
-Matthew 10:35-37

The last estimate I remember hearing is that approximately 20-25% of the world's population is Catholic, which is somewhere between 1.5 to 2 billion people, and most Catholics are unwilling to even consider how that many people could be deceived.

And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world:  
-Revelation 12:9

Again, I remind Catholics that there is a very narrow path to Christ and eternal life. Narrow means that it is not very wide; it is specific, and there is no room to stray, but the path and gates to hell are wide open that many would go in:

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.  
-Matthew 7:13-15

If any priest comes to you and tells you many people are going to heaven, and that few or no one is going to hell, then that is a false teacher, a false prophet, trying to appear good on the outside, but they are inwardly full of death and vile wickedness.

But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.  
-2 Peter 2:1

Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres [tombs], which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men’s bones, and of all uncleanness.  
-Matthew 23:27

Don't misunderstand; the Pharisees were well-respected in society, much like Catholic priests. They were thought to be righteous, upstanding citizens, and devout religious men, just as Catholics are typically viewed by the media and our culture, but in reality, they are inwardly corrupt, full of wickedness and abominations, which is why Christ rebuked them.
The Lord God warns us that these false teachers will have an outward appearance of godliness, but inwardly, they deny the power (i.e. authority) of God, and that we are turn away from such people. The Bible tells us that they learn all the time, studying many things, increasing their education, but they can never come to know the truth of the Word of God:

_Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth._

-2 Timothy 3:4-7

These wicked priests, and the Catholics laden with sins who follow them, will speak flattering words about Jesus, but Christ told us their hearts are far away from Him:

_This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me._

-Matthew 15:8

There can be only one truth; there can't be multiple truths. The Bible and the Catholic Church cannot both be right; there are too many contradictions. Someone is wrong, and our souls are at stake in this battle for truth, so this subject should be handled with seriousness, and I urge Catholics to take it seriously.

It is my prayer that one day, one Catholic might be led to conversion and salvation by the Lord Jesus Christ after reading this book. If any of you who are born again in Christ were glad to read this truth and learned something from it, please share it with others, in hopes that one more can come to repentance and be saved by the pure teaching of God's Word to lost souls in the Catholic Church.

_Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool._

-Isaiah 1:18

_The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering towards us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance._

-2 Peter 3:9

_Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing._

-2 Corinthians 7:9

_And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers._

-John 10:4-5

_My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand._

-John 10:27-28